GRAMMAR

OF THE

TIBETAN LANGUAGE

LITERARY AND COLLOQUIAL.

With copious Illustrations, and treating fully of Spelling, Pronunciation and the Construction of the Verb, and including Appendices of the various forms of the Verb.

BY

HERBERT BRUCE HANNAH, Esq.,
Barrister-at-Law, and Advocate of the High Court, Calcutta.

CALCUTTA:

PRINTED AT THE BAPTIST MISSION PRESS. 1912.

OEN"

519

Date 23-11-53

Call N 1-95.45/ Han

PREFACE.

For many centuries Tibet has been a terra incognita—little or nothing being known about it, as regards either its physical conditions or its inner life.

Not, indeed, till a few years ago, when a British force entered Lhasa, the "Place of the minor gods," was the veil withdrawn; and even then the withdrawal was only partial, transient, and very local.

As for the language, though there have been several gallant attempts to plunge into the labyrinthine obscurities of its construction—notably on the part of Alexander Csoma de Körös in 1834 and subsequently of H. A. Jäschke—that also, it must be confessed, remains more or less a mystery; for no one, I take it, is likely to aver that the present state of our knowledge on the subject is at all satisfactory.

Much, no doubt, has been contributed by the more recent labours of Rāi Sarat Chandra Dās Bahādur, Mr. Vincent Henderson, the Rev. Edward Amundsen, and Mr. C. A. Bell, I.C.S. But, in spite of all, even they, and every one else who has taken up the study, will admit that, wherever one treads, the ground still feels uncomfortably shaky, especially in regard to certain espects of the so-called verb; wherever he gropes there is something that seems ever to elude him; and, amid the weird philological phantoms that flit uncertainly around in the prevailing gloom, his constant cry, I feel very sure, is still one for more light.

I do not for one moment claim for this grammar the character of a centific work. Many years ago when I was studying the language in aling, under Kāzi Dawa Sam Dūp—a particularly intelligent and folk trly Tibetan—it was my habit during the course of my morning's latten to make notes of what I then learnt. After a time these notes mame so numerous that for my own convenience I was obliged to buce them to some degree of order. These ordered notes themselves owing in bulk, the idea occurred to me that I might just as well put nem into the form of a book, and this I did—the result being a MS. which has long lain by me, but which is now about to be published.

It is merely another attempt on the part of one who has tried

PREFACE.

to profit by the works of others, to re-state (originally for his own private satisfaction) what has already been achieved in a field of obscure and somewhat difficult research; to correct or modify previous effort, wherever correction or modification seemed necessary or desirable; and even, to some extent, to supplement it in one or two respects which appeared to be susceptible of further elucidation and expansion.

Both Literary and Colloquial Tibetan have been dealt with, the particular dialect chosen for exposition being that standard one, known as the 555 or \ddot{U} $K\ddot{a}$, which is now spoken in and around the centre of Tibetan Civilisation—Lhasa.

This is the dialect in which, as the result of centuries of developing Lamäic culture, the phonetic values of Tibetan are found to have undergone a greater degree of change from those of the original speech than any of the other dialects.

In other regions of Tibet, it is said, the prefixes, superposed letters, and suffixes, are still more or less pronounced as of old, and the original vowel-sounds are still more or less unaltered, in a degree corresponding to the remoteness of the speakers from, or their proximity to, the Holy City.

The difficulties confronting the student of Tibetan are considerably enhanced by the fact that in addition to the Literary Language and the Modern Colloquial, it also possesses a totally different vocabulary the employment of which is de rigueur when one is conversing or corresponding with a person of quality. This is known as the Honorific Language; and besides that there is another called the High Honorific, which is only used when addressing exalted personages such as the Dalai Lama or the Tashi Lama. With these honorific forms of speech, however, this work is not particularly concerned. The student, if so inclined, can easily hunt them up for himself, after he has acquired a working knowledge of the ordinary literary or book language and the modern colloquial.

Attention is particularly invited to the earlier paragraphs of the Grammar dealing with the important subject of Pronunciation, in which an endeavour has been made, on principles more systematic and accurate than those hitherto in vogue, to ascertain, fix, and express in roman characters, the subtle distinctions that lurk between the numerous phonetic values of the Tibetan consonants and vowels; also

to the paragraph explanatory of the use of the Tibetan Dictionary; and to the tabular statement showing what dominant consonants in a Tibetan word take particular prefixes.

A paragraph has also been exclusively devoted to an exhaustive treatment of the subject of Spelling. This is a most useful accomplishment, and one that the student should take some pains to acquire.

The so-called verb has also been elaborately treated in the body of the book; but in the appendices a novel and perhaps somewhat risky attempt has been made (how far successfully remains to be seen) to present it in the guise of skeleton conjugations or paradigms. These forms, however, should not be taken too literally, as they are not always absolute or rigid expressions, but are liable to frequent modification, or moulding, in accordance with the elusive and temporizing genius of the Tibetan sentence, the construction of which is unique, and can only be appreciated after much mental effort and distress.

As a matter of fact the only real verb in Tibetan is the verb Tobe, whether in the form of $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{7}^{-}\mathbb{W}_{1}^{-}$ Yin-pa, or $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{7}^{-}\mathbb{W}_{1}^{-}$ Yo'pa, and the beginner is advised to master it at as early a stage as possible in the course of his studies. He should make special note of the manner in which Literary $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{7}^{-}\mathbb{W}_{1}^{-}$ differs from Colloquial $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{7}^{-}\mathbb{W}_{1}^{-}$. Also of the important fact that $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{7}^{-}\mathbb{W}_{1}^{-}$ is sometimes a substantive verb, meaning $Tobe\ present$, $To\ exist$, and sometimes a mere copula or an auxiliary, like $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{7}^{-}\mathbb{W}_{1}^{-}$

All other verbs are practically a kind of noun-phrases, dependent for their significations upon the various moods and tenses of these two verbs $\sqrt[3]{3}$ and $\sqrt[3]{3}$

Throughout, the observations explanatory of each subject are followed by numerous illustrations, both Colloquial and Literary, the latter being mostly taken from the Tibetan version of the New Testament—a mine of idiomatic wealth. Amongst these illustrations will be found a few culled from Jäschke's and Das's Dictionaries, or from Amundsen's Primer. In most of such cases either the names or the initials of these authors have been given, but in one or two instances (from Amundsen) on p. 256, the reference has been omitted by an oversight.

Up to a certain stage the romanized equivalent of the Tibetan is given; but after that the student is left to discern the proper pronunciation by means of his own unaided skill.

Om does not mean Oh at all, and the phrase as a whole, is much deeper and more complex in its signification than the above rendering would imply.

Om alone is an all-embracing expression, and stands mystically for the incarnation of the Deity, or rather for the immanence of the Supreme Being in, as well as for Its transcendence above, the phenomenal or existent world, so far as the terms 'immanence' and 'transcendence' are applicable to the relations subsisting between that world and Pure Subsistence. In other words, it stands for the never-ending kosmic process of the self-effacing involution of Paramâtman, or Brahman, into Existence, or the world of Matter, and Its self-expressing evolution through Matter back to Substantial Being. This process, indeed, constitutes the famous so-called "Wheel of Life" in its Kosmic aspect.

The formula may be roughly analysed thus:-

জে' - The source of all speech

Embodiment of the Trinity.

ম'ই' - Wish-granting jewel; symbolical of temporal blessings; also of the Psychical Âtman or Spiritual Ego.

ম'র or ম্ব্'ন - Lotus; symbolical of biune man and of spiritual re-birth.

ຊື່ - It is, or I am, omnipresent.

58 - Sat, the universal Life Principle, or Satyasya Satyam of the Upanishads, i.e., the Noumenal Reality underlying Empirical Reality.

The entire phrase, therefore, merely in this one limited aspect of its meaning (and it may be read in many other ways) signifies—"The Embodiment of the Trinity, or Incarnation of Deity, is my wish-granting jewel in the lotus of spiritual rebirth"; the idea apparently being that since the Kosmical Atman, or Brahman, i.e. the first or inner principle of the universe, and the Psychical Atman, or inner principle of individual Man, are essentially one and the same, our hope of spiritual rebirth is assured in and by the fact of the eternal subsistence of Brahman and the ceaselessness of the kosmic process above referred to—human re-incarnation being a microcosmic effect, or aspect, of the macrocosmic law.

Hence, whenever a lama is heard droning out his $Om\ mani\ p\ddot{a}$ ' me $h\bar{u}m$, he is really reciting his version of one of the profoundest creeds known to philosophy—but in most cases probably with an artless ignorance that is equally profound.

Another mistake that one often meets with, especially in Theosophical literature, is that which represents the word Devachan as signifying The dwelling of the gods, doubtless from some vague idea that it is derived from the Perso-Hindustāni words Dewa, 'a god,' and Khān, or Khāneh, 'a dwelling-house.' It is really the Tibetan word \$\sigma_{\infty}^{\infty} \sigma_{\infty}^{\infty} \sigma_{\inf

No one will be better pleased than myself to see any errors in this book corrected, or doubts removed, by competent critics. I am conscious that there must be errors, and I know there are doubts; while the desire of all who are interested in the language cannot but be to see our knowledge of it advanced.

My acknowledgments are due to the grammarians already named, and especially to Mr. Henderson and Mr. Bell, whose respective manuals and vocabularies marked a considerable advance upon the grammars that they supplemented and, if I may say so, displaced. The earlier grammars by Csoma de Körös and Jäschke were concerned for the most part, if not solely, with archaic classical Tibetan. The former's "Colloquial Phrases" were anything but what would now be regarded as colloquial; while Jäschke's colloquial was that of Western Tibet. These grammars, therefore, were not altogether satisfactory for the purposes of modern requirements. Moreover, the manner in which they dealt with the mysteries of the verb left much to be desired. As for the late Rev. Graham Sandberg's grammar, though very elaborate and learned,

it did not really constitute a bar to the successful appearance of the Manuals above alluded to. Indeed it may perhaps be said that not until the publication of Mr. Bell's book were the true forms and functions of the verb, and especially of \(\times_3^2\) and \(\times_5^2\) To be, stated with anything like precision and lucidity.

I desire also to acknowledge my obligations to the Hon'ble Vice-Chancellor (Sir Ashutosh Mukerji, Kt.) and Syndicate of the Calcutta University, under whose auspices this contribution to the study of Tibetan has attained the honour and privilege of publication.

Lastly, my grateful thanks are also due to Dr. and Mrs. Denison Ross for much kindness and help accorded from time to time; and perhaps most of all to my Mūnshi, Kāzi Dawa Sam Dūp, and to Mr. David Macdonald of Kalimpong (probably the first Tibetan scholar in India) who was kind enough to go through the entire MS. and to favour me with his critical comments and general approval.

H. B. H.

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

CHAPTER I.

| | | PRELIMINARY. | | n |
|------|-----|---|-------|-----------|
| 1,00 | | | | Page |
| Ś | 1. | The T KA-K'A | • • | 1 |
| | | I. The 河 친 KĀ-Lī | •• | 1 |
| | | II. The জ А А-ы | •• | 3 |
| \$ | 2. | Romanized Equivalents | | - 5 |
| \$ | 3. | Phonetic Modifications of Vowels | | 8 |
| | | Notes | • • | 11 |
| 5 | 4. | The Six Reversed Letters | | 15 |
| \$ | 5. | The Seven Consonants to which _ may be subjoined | d | 16 |
| \$ | 6. | The Fourteen Consonants to which γ may be subjoint | ned | 17 |
| 3 | 7. | The Six Consonants to which 5 may be subjoined | •• | 18 |
| \$ | 8. | The Six Silent Consonants to which A may be subjoint | ined | 18 |
| \$ | 9. | The Sixteen Consonants to which may be subjoin | ned | 18 |
| 5 | 10. | The Twelve Ra-go Consonants | | 21 |
| \$ | 11. | The Ten La-go Consonants | | 21 |
| \$ | 12. | The Twelve Sa-go Consonants | | 21 |
| \$ | 13. | The Five Prefixes | | 22 |
| \$ | 14. | Initial Letters and the Prefixes each may take | 1 - N | 24 |
| | -1 | Notes | | 28 |
| 8 | 15. | Peculiarities of Pronunciation | | 29 |
| 8 | 16. | The Ten Consonantal Affixes | | 33 |
| 8 | 17. | The Eleven Final Duplications | | 34 |
| \$ | 18. | Colloquial Duplications | | 37 |
| Ş | 19. | The Tone System | | 39 |
| \$ | 20. | Writing and Punctuation | | 45 |

| | | | | | | | Page |
|----|-----|------|----------|------------------------------|---------------|-------|------|
| 3 | 21. | Spe | elling | | | | 50 |
| \$ | 22. | Tra | nslitera | ation | 7 | | 55 |
| 8 | 23. | Use | of the | Tibetan Dictionary | | | 55 |
| 5 | 24. | Inc | licative | and Differentiating Particle | es | | 57 |
| 5 | 25. | Th | e Cases | and their Signs | | | 61 |
| | | I. | The N | Tominative Case | | | 62 |
| | | II. | The V | ocative Case | | | 63 |
| | 100 | III. | The O | bjective or Accusative Case | | | 63 |
| | | IV. | The G | enitive Case | 12 | 9-15 | 63 |
| | | V. | The D | ative Case | | | 65 |
| | | VI. | The A | gentive Case | | - | 67 |
| | 7 | VII. | The I | ocative Case | | | 69 |
| | V | III. | The P | eriodal or Durational Case | | | 71 |
| | | IX. | The M | Iodal Case | | | 73 |
| | | X. | The A | blative Case | | | 75 |
| | | XI. | The T | erminative or Transitive Cas | se | | 77 |
| \$ | 26. | Nu | MERALS | | | | |
| | | I. | The Co | ardinal Numbers | | | 82 |
| | | II. | The C | ardinals according to Alphab | etical Enu | mera- | |
| | | | ti | on | | | 85 |
| | | | Notes | | | | |
| | | 1 | 1. | Pronunciation | = | | 86 |
| | | | 2. | Affixes | | | 86 |
| | | | 3. | Conjunctions | | | 87 |
| | | | 4. | The Indefinite Article | | | 87 |
| | | | 5. | Approximate Numbers | | | 87 |
| | | | 6. | Ordinal Numbers | | | 88 |
| | | | 7. | Distributive Numbers | | 9. | 88 |
| | | | 8. | Aggregates | 3.4.0 | | 89 |
| | | | 9. | Fractions | production of | | 89 |
| | | | 10. | Adverbial Cardinal Number | ers | | 90 |
| | | | 11. | ,, Ordinal ,, | | | 91 |
| | | | 12. | Definite and Indefinite Nu | merals | | 91 |
| | | | 13. | Noun Substantives | . 1 | | . 93 |
| | | | 14 | Notation by letters | | | 0.3 |

CHAPTER II.

| | ETYMOLOGY. | | | Dane |
|----------------|---|---------------|------|------------|
| §: 27. | The Definite Article | | | Page 95 |
| § 28. § 29. | The Indefinite Article The Noun. | ••• | | 99 |
| | | | | |
| A | -Structure | | | 101 |
| | 1. Monosyllables, Dissyllables, and | Polysyllab | oles | 101 |
| | 2. The affix ठाप्तज् | | | 104 |
| | 3. The affix 35, | ••• | | 104 |
| | 4. The affix 引っ. | •• | | 106 |
| | 5. The affix $ egin{array}{ll} \hline \end{array} $ | | | 106 |
| | 6. Abstract Nouns | •• | | 106 |
| В | .—Inflexion | | | |
| | 1. Gender | | | 107 |
| | 2. Number | | | 109 |
| | 3. Case | | | 111 |
| | I. Noun ending in a Vowel | | | 111 |
| | II. ", ", ", ", чт ог ст | | | 115 |
| | ш. ", ", ", ", ", " | or % ' | | 116 |
| | IV. " " , জুঁ, কাঁ, | ج. or ط. | •• | 116 |
| § 30. | THE ADJECTIVE. | | | |
| | I. Form and Place | | | 116 |
| | II. Augmenting of Adjectives | | 100 | 127 |
| | III. The Comparative Degree | | | 129 |
| | IV. The Superlative Degree | | | 131 |
| | V. Other Methods of Comparison | on | • | 134 |
| § 31. | THE PRONOUN. | | | |
| | I. Personal Pronouns | | | 135 |
| | II. Declension of Personal Pro | onouns | | 138 |
| | III. The Reflexive Pronouns | | | 140 |
| | · IV. Compounds in 55 Rang | | | 143 |

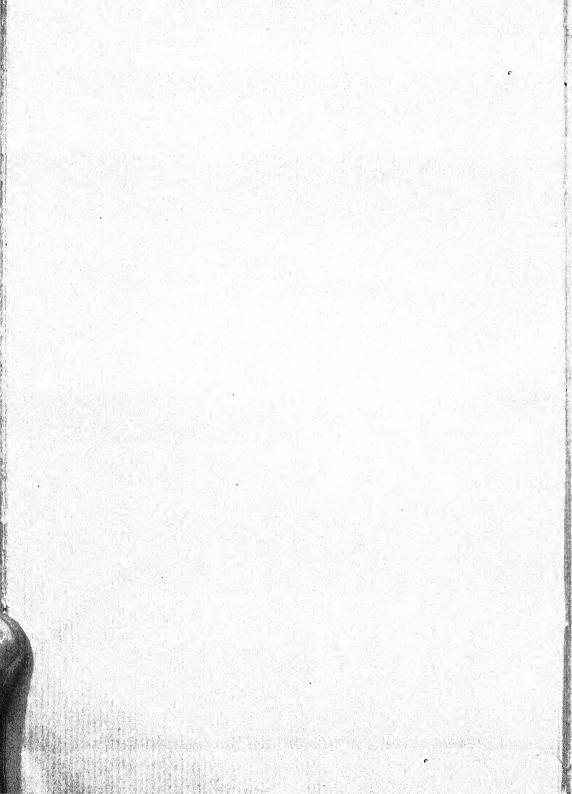
| | | | Page |
|--|-------------------------|----------|------|
| V. Possessive Pronouns | | | |
| 1. Ordinary Personal Pro | nouns | • | 144 |
| 2. Reflexive Possessive Pr | ronouns | | 148 |
| VI. Demonstrative Pronouns | · · · · · | • | 147 |
| VII. The Reciprocal Pronoun | | ••• | 150 |
| VIII. Interrogative Pronouns | | | 15] |
| IX. Relative and Correlative Prov | rouns | | |
| A. Relative Pronouns | | | 153 |
| B. Correlative Pronouns | | • | 160 |
| X. Indefinite Pronouns | | • | 169 |
| § 32. Adverbs | •• | | 177 |
| § 33. Postpositions | | •• | 194 |
| § 34. Conjunctions | | 1.1 | 201 |
| § 35. 📆 \ \ To be | | | 207 |
| | | | |
| § 36. $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{5}^{T}$ To have | ••• | • • • | 228 |
| § 37. भेंद्रा To be | | | 229 |
| | | • • | 220 |
| § 38. THE VERB. | | | |
| I. Preliminary | | | 239 |
| II. Roots | | •• | 239 |
| III. Auxiliary Verbs | 1 . • · · · · · · · · · | • | 243 |
| IV. Auxiliary Particles. | | | |
| (1) में, में, गीं, etc. | | ••• | 244 |
| (2) শী্ষা, শী্ষা, শী্ষা, etc. | | | 245 |
| | | 434 | |
| (3) मी द मीद, गीद, etc. | • | •• | 245 |
| (4) ਤੋਂ, ਤੋਂ, ਝੋਂ ··· | | | 246 |
| (1985) (1986 - 1987 - 1985 - 1987 - 1987 - 1987 - 1987 - 1987 - 1987 - 1987 - 1987 - 1987 - 1987 - 1987 - 1987 | | | |
| (5) हिंद, ब्रिट, ब्रीट | ••• | 1.00 | 247 |
| (6) 지취 and 지취 | | 16 | 248 |
| | | | |
| (7) বৃষ্ | | | 249 |
| (8) 시작: | | Turk (m) | 249 |
| | | | |
| (9) Š | ·•• | ••• | 251 |
| (10) Q . | • | | 259 |

| | | | | | Page |
|-------|-------------------------|---------------|----------|-------|-------------|
| | (11) 南" | | | | 254 |
| | 5 | | | - 140 | |
| | (12) W | •• | •• | 1.5 | 255 |
| | (13) 55 | •• | 19 2 | | 25 5 |
| | (14) 5, 5, 5, 5, | શું, વા | • | | 257 |
| | (15) বৰিব and বৰিব | 5 | | •• | 258 |
| | (16) ঠ⊏ | . | | | 259 |
| | (17) 5% and 5% A. | | •• | | 259 |
| v. | Moods and Tenses. | | | | |
| | A.—Infinitive Mood | | | | 259 |
| | B.—The Supine | | | | 263 |
| | C.—The Verbal Noun | | | | 265 |
| | D.—Participles | | | | 267 |
| | E.—Gerunds | •• | • | 9 | 271 |
| | F.—Indicative Mood. | | ÷ | | |
| | (a) Present | | | | 272 |
| | (b) Imperfect | | | | 275 |
| | | | | | 276 |
| | (c) Perfect | | • | | |
| | (d) Past Indefinit | ъe | | | 277 |
| | (e) Pluperfect | | | | 279 |
| | (f) Future | | | | 281 |
| | G.—Subjunctive and Con | iditional Mod | ods | | 283 |
| | H.—Potential Mood | • | | | 285 |
| | I.—Probability | | | | 288 |
| | J.—Hortative Mood | | | • • | 290 |
| | K.—Purposive Mood | | | 15.7 | 292 |
| | L.—Precative Mood | 1 | • • | | 292 |
| | M.—Permissive Mood | | | | 293 |
| | N.—Optative Mood | | | | 294 |
| | O.—Imperative Mood | | | | 296 |
| VI. | The Passive Voice | | | | 299 |
| VII. | Compound Verbs | | | W | 300 |
| TIII. | Verbs of becoming, grow | ing, changir | ng, etc. | | 303 |
| 'IX | | | | | 303 |
| X. | Imminence | | | -4 | 304 |
| 146.1 | | | | | |

| | | | Page |
|-----------|--|-----------|-------------|
| XI. | Continuatives | | 304 |
| XII. | Finality or Accomplishment | | 305 |
| XIII. | Desideratives | | 305 |
| XIV. | Frequentatives | | 306 |
| XV. | Use of the Perfect Root in the Colloquial | 7.00 | 307 |
| | 경기가 하다 나는 그렇게 하는 것이 하다고 있었다. | | |
| | Baratan B alaba n da Perdan | | |
| | CHAPTER III. | | |
| | | | |
| 39. | Syntax | •• | 308 |
| | APPENDIX of CONJUGATIONS. | | |
| I. | Colloquial To be present; To exist; To | be | 310 |
| II. | LITERARY Ditto | | 315 |
| III. | Colloquial पेंद्र'या To be | | 320 |
| IV. | LITERARY Ditto | | 325 |
| v. | অঁ5্ম To have ; to possess | | 331 |
| VI. | Active, Transitive, 4-Rooted Colloquial V | rerb | |
| | ন্দিন To send | • | 331 |
| VII. | LITERARY Ditto | | 340 |
| VIII. | Passive, 4-Rooted Colloquial Verb 키카드 회 | To | |
| | be sent | | 349 |
| IX. | Active, one-Rooted Colloquial Verb মুলুম্ম | To | |
| | see | | 354 |
| x. | Neuter, one-Rooted Colloquial Verb 5773 | To | |
| | be glad, To rejoice | | 360 |
| XI. | LITERARY Ditto | | 361 |
| XII. | Passive, 4-Rooted LITERARY Verb. 4555 | or | |
| | দার্দ্রিন্মেন্যারা To be sent | • | 36 8 |
| XIII. | Active, 2-Rooted Colloquial Verb এ ব্রানি To g | 10 | 371 |
| XIV. | LITERARY Ditto | garrist : | 378 |
| XV. | 2-Rooted LITERARY Verb 3757 To become, | tc. | 383 |

CONTENTS.

| | | Page |
|--------|---|------|
| XVI. | Active, 4-Rooted Colloquial Verb 3577 To do, | |
| | To make, etc | 387 |
| XVII. | LITERARY Ditto | 389 |
| XVIII. | 지역주었으며, 유리이탈했다고 교육하는데 가지 기계들이 방문 술에 없다는 그렇게 내려왔다. | |
| | or অব্যাতি be made, To be done, etc | 393 |
| XIX. | Passive, 4-Rooted Literary Verb 57 To be | |
| | made, To be done, etc | 394 |
| XX. | Passive, LITERARY Verb 35,444,49,47 To be | |
| | made, or done, etc | 395 |



ERRATA ET CORRIGENDA.

| Page | 4,] | line | 1 | at | bottom. | For | * | read | Ť |
|---|------|------|------------|------|--|---|--|------|--|
| .,,, | 8, | ,, | 5 f | rom | ,, | " | A . | ,,, | Ħ |
| | 9, | ,, | 13 | ,, | ,, | | i in col. 2 | ,, | ī. |
| ,, | 12, | ,, | 6 | 3 2 | top. | ,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,, | "affected" | ,, | "effected." |
| ,, | 12, | ,, | 12 | ,, | bottom. | ,, | "affected" | ,, | "effected." |
| ,, | 14, | ,, | 2 | ,, | top. | ,, | Yata | ,, | $Yat\bar{a}$. |
| ,, | 18, | ,, | 7 | ,, | bottom. | ,, | LEN-PA | ,, | LÈN-PA. |
| 37 | 19, | 9,9 | 2 | ,,, | ,, | ,,, | Сно | ,, | Ch'o. |
| ,, | 21, | ,, | 1 | at | top. | ,, | सम्। | ,, | समें |
| ,, | 21, | ,, | 2 | from | ,, | | Heda | ,,, | Head. |
| " | 22, | 3, | 7 | ,, | bottom. | ** | 51 . | ,, | हा |
| 73 | 22, | ,, | 6 | ,, | ,, | ,,, | ĎA | ,, | Ďа. |
| ,, | 23, | , , | 11 | ,, | 99 | ,, | ĞЕВ | ,, | ĞЕв. |
| 33 | 25, | ,, | 7 | ,, | top. | ,, | БA | ,, | Ğ'Ā. |
| ,, | 27, | ,, | 8 | ,, | bottom. | ,, | Ž | ,, | Ž. |
| 12 | 27, | ,, | 7 | ,, | ,, | ,, | ditto. | | |
| ,, | 28, | ,, | 4 | ,, | ,,, | 25 | Ва́в | ,, | В́ав́. |
| " | 31, | ,, | 6 | ,, | top. | ,, | m | ,, | n. |
| ,,, | 31, | ,, | 4 | .,, | bottom. | ,, | BAR | ,, | BAR, and |
| | | | | | | ,, | BA | ,, | Ďа. |
| • • • • | 33, | ,, | 3 | ,, | top. | " | ŽHYU | ,, | ZHYU, and |
| | | | | | | ,, | Žнуυм | ,, | ŽHYUM. |
| " | 35, | ,, | 6 | 33 | bottom. | . ,, - | jj. | ,, | D |
| • | 48, | ,, | 5 | ,, | ,, | ,, | "lines loping" |)) | "line slop- ing." |
| ,, | 49, | ,, | 9 | ,,, | top. | ,,, | ୟ | , , | 21 |
| ,, | 49, | ,, | 14 | ,, | ,, | ,, | "up" | ,, | "at." |
| ٠,٠ | 56, | ,, | 3 | ,, | 9.9 | ,, | 읝 | ,, | ନ୍ଧ |
| ,, | 68, | ,, | 1 | at | ,, | ,,,, | Ś | ,, | Ġ. |
| | | | | | and the second of the second o | 1 5111 1 | A STATE OF THE STA | | The state of the s |

```
Page 89, line 10 from bottom. For ŹHYI read ZHYI.
                                         ditto.
     89. ,,
                                ,,
                        ,,
                                         ditto.
                       top
     89, ,,
                ,,
                                ,,
                                                  in both places
                                         ditto
     89, ,,
                ,,
                               ,,
                                            read ŹHYI'.
                                   ZHYI'
     91, ,,
                                             ", Źнуľ.
                                   ZHYI'
             4
     91, ,,
                ,,
                                                 ZHYIG.
                                   ZHYIG
             4
     91, ,,
                ,,
                        . .
                                                 گار
    106, ,, 11
                                ,,
                        22
                                                 ビ.ヹヹ.
     139, last line.
                                   ニズイ
                                   Ã.
     140, line 12 from bottom.
                                ,, मारे ,, मारे
     151, ,, 12
                                   Delete on between 5 and Ex.
     153, ,, 10 ,,
                                                 read that.
                                   hath
     169, ,, 1 at
                      top
                                                 ,, गर्दायर
                                ,, गर्नेद्राय र
                      bottom.
     243, ,, 10 from
                     top. ,, न्रैरा
     262, ,, 2 ,,
                                                 ,, द्रमान्यदे
                   bottom. " दम् परे
     306, ,, 6 ,,
                                                  ,, होत
                                ,, No
     329, ,, 3 ,,
     347, last line. Delete second and third dot between 555
                           and মানব।
                               Read "might be sent."
     351, line 11 from bottom.
                               Delete " all or all or sall"
     371, ,, 11 ,, ,,
                                   and re-insert after "Particle" on
                                   next previous line.
                               For A'TIT
                                                 read स्त्मर
  ,, 381, ,, 5 ,, top.
                                                 " दर्गेरः
     382, ,, 10 ,, bottom. ,, ६९ ४
                                                 " 5 and for
   ,, 386, ,, 8 ,,
                         33
```

CORRIGENDA—(continued).

Page 66 (middle of page).

Delete the words "some uncertainty," and substitute the words "personal knowledge and is certain."

Also delete the word "almost."

Also delete the words "at all," and substitute the word "exactly."

Also delete the words "only hazarding the statement," and substitute the words "speaking on information."

Page 207 (bottom of page).

Delete the words "an emphatic or positive statement is intended," and substitute the words "the speaker expresses knowledge derived from information."

After the words "No there is not," insert the words "(so I am informed)."

Then add the following:—

"A57| is used when the speaker expresses personal knowledge and certainty. Thus:—

মন্ষ। মন্বুনা No, there is not (I know). (See also p. 66)."



Tibetan Grammar.

CHAPTER I.

PRELIMINARY.

§ 1.—The T Ka-K'a, or TIBETAN GRAPHIC SYSTEM.

I.— TH Kā-li, or Consonantal Series of thirty letters.

| Letter. | Name. | Remarks. |
|----------|---------|--|
| 71 | Ka | Like K in the Urdu word كب KAB, When. A compact sound. |
| P | K'a | Kh , forcibly aspirated. Like the Persian \dot{c} Kh . |
| ম্ | Ġа | Pronounced softly, from low down in the throat, rather more sharply than hard English G , and in a way that to English ears seems to give it the sound of K . |
| Ϊ, | Nga | Like the sound of ng in the English word $sing$. It often begins a word in Tibetan. As a final, often represented by a superscribed o, called o 75 % o Lä'-kor, or o $cipher$. |
| 8 | Cha | Like the Ch in charge. A compact sound. |
| ಹ | Ch'a | Chha. A forcibly aspirated ch. |
| Ę | Ja, Jʻa | Like the J in jar . As an initial it is slightlyne pirated, and may be pronounced like \mathfrak{F} ch. by |

N.B.—For the powers of these letters, as represented by their romanized valents, see § 2.

| Letter. | Name. | Remarks. |
|---------|--------|--|
| 3 | Nya | Like the combined sound of the nya in lanyard. |
| 5 | Та | A compact dental sound, like the Urdu or Persian , or the Bengali . |
| ঘ | T'a | Also dental, but forcibly aspirated. |
| 5 | Ďа | This is not exactly a dental d , nor is it an aspirated d , as sometimes described, but a dental sound, rather like the th in $think$, as pronounced by some Irishmen; or like the Bengali $\overline{\gamma}$, but with a strong similarity to a dental t . A soft sound. |
| ক্ | Na | A dental N, softly sounded. |
| -4 | - Pa | English P , but more fully and compactly pronounced. |
| 4 | P'a | Not Ph (i.e. F, or Fh), but P-h. A strong aspirate. |
| ٩ | Ва | Sharper than the English B , and rather like P , but softer than the latter. |
| ম | Ma | English M, sometimes abbreviated into 0, written over the initial, and representing final m, and called o न्या कार्यो o La'-kor, o cipher. It is also called |
| | | हुन्गर Tö'-kor and is the same as the Sanskrit Anuswara. |
| ₹. | Tsa | Like the sound of Ts , or Russian Tsē. A compact sound. |
| ಹ | Ts'a | Not Tsh, but Ts-h, strongly aspirated. |
| Ę | Dz'a | Not Dzh, but Dz-h. Aspirated. |
| B | Wa | English W. |
| 3. | . Źhya | Something like the French J in $jadis$, or Persian j , or Russian Zhē, but with a tendency towards the sound sh , and also with the ya sound. Hence, hard $z'hya$, or soft $shya$. |

| Letter. | Name. | Remarks. |
|---------|-------|--|
| 3 | Źa | English Z , but inclining to sound of s . |
| ٩ | 'a | Spiritus lenis, with a vowel-sound like that in the Urdu word بس Bas, Enough; but soft and long, as though gently emanating from the throat. In words from Sanskrit it is used as a "mora," to denote prosodical length, i.e. a long syllable. |
| W | Ya | English Y, as in yard, you, yoke, ye, yes, yiddish, yea. |
| 5 | Ra | English R , well sounded. |
| ત્ય | La | English L , but, at the end of a syllable, sounded either very faintly or not at all, and sometimes changed to 5° Ra . |
| q | Sha | Sh. Full, strong sound. |
| ম | Sa | S. Full, strong sound, like ss in hiss, but, at the end of a syllable, not sounded at all. |
| 5 | Ha | H. Well aspirated. |
| জ | A | Like the vowel-sound in the Urdu word بس Bas, Enough. Pronounced very short: but a harder, fuller and compacter sound than that of 3. The |
| | | sound of 'S' is inherent in all simple non-final |
| | | consonants unqualified by any vowel-sign, and in all compound consonants sounding as one, when similarly unqualified. It is not inherent in the |
| | | consonant Q which has a softer and more emanating sound. |

II.—The IN A-LI, or Vowel-Series, being five vowels, and four vowel-signs. For the purpose of illustrating the signs, one of the vowels, namely, IN A, which is also regarded as a consonant by Tibetans, is adopted as a basis. Any other consonant, however, would do equally well.

| Letter. | Name. | Remarks. |
|-------------|-------|---|
| (51) | a | Like a in بى Bas, Enough. Pronunciation short, hard, compact and full. Inherent in all non-final consonants not qualified by any vowel-signs, and in single-letter and compound-letter syllables sounding as one syllable, when similarly unqualified. Thus, in 🏋 T'ANG, Path, it is inherent |
| | | in \(\frac{1}{2} \) but not in the final \(\frac{1}{2} \). So it is inherent in |
| | | □ NGA, I, but not in □ NGO, Face; and in |
| | | A. La, Pay, salary, but not in J. Lu, song. It also ceases to inhere by reason of modifications other than qualifying vowel-signs, as will hereafter be shown. See § 3. |
| ধ্য | i | Short, like the i in is. The sign is a called A |
| | | G'I-G'U, The Angle, and it is placed over the letter it modifies. Thus, J KYI, A sign of the Genitive Case. |
| ISI | u | Short, like the u in $full$. The sign is \circ called |
| 2 | | সুমান্ত Źнулв-күυ, The hook, and it is placed under the letter it modifies. Thus, 5 D'u, A sign of the Terminative Case. |
| জ | е | Short, like a in made, or the Italian e. The sign |
| | | is - called ATTT DENG-BU, The standing stroke, and it is placed over the letter it modifies. Thus, FRE-RE, each. |
| উ | 0 | Short, like the o in for, or rock. The sign is ~ |
| | | called NA-RO, The horns over the nose, and |
| | | it is placed over the letter it modifies. Thus, $\overline{\xi}$ |
| | | Ro, A corpse; স্মান Gong, Price; সুস্মান Lod- |
| | | PA, To read; 預刊 Lo', Lightning; 著 Do, Stone. |

§ 2.—The ROMANIZED EQUIVALENTS adopted in this work, showing the Powers of the thirty consonants.

| Tibetan Character. | Romanized Equivalent. | Remarks. |
|-----------------------|--|---|
| | 1 | Acute accent, used for instance with g , when GA , is pronounced almost like k ; and |
| | Particular and the second of t | with d , when 5 DA, is pronounced almost |
| | | like T. Thus, $\exists \exists \exists$ Gong, Price, because it |
| | | is pronounced nearly like Kong; but $\widetilde{\Xi}$ Go, Door, pronounced like the ordinary hard English g. So also \widetilde{S} DE, The, That, because |
| | | it is pronounced almost like dental TE; but 35° DI, The, This, pronounced as dental d. |
| | U | This sign, placed over any letter, signifies a raising of the tone. |
| -•• | • | Spiritus lenis, or gentle breathing. It is placed before a, thus 'a, to represent 'For |
| | | example, TMQ K'A, Order, Command. For simplicity's sake, however, we shall seldom use it. It will never be used to represent Q as a prefix. |
| | C | Spiritus asper, or rough breathing. Thus A. K'A, for KHA. e.g., ABTO K'YER-WA, To carry away. |
| η | K | Tonic pitch high. |
| F | K. | Pitch lower than K. |
| শ্ | • Ġ | Pitch deep. |

| Tibetan Character. | Romanized Equivalent. | Remarks. |
|-----------------------|--------------------------|---|
| শৃ guarded | G | e.g.—취지 ĞAM, Box, Chest. Pitch higher than g. |
| 5 | Ng | Pitch low; sometimes represented by o La'-kor, o cipher. |
| 3 | Ch | Pitch very high. |
| ಹ | Chʻ | Pitch lower than ch. |
| Ę | J, J ʻ | When an initial, represented by J'. Thus E' J'A, Tea. When it has a prefix, represented by J. Thus, QENU JÜ-PA, To cling; NEUU JÄ-WA, To come to, To meet, To |
| | Ny | pay one's respects to. Pitch very low. |
| 3 | T | Pitch very high. |
| 5 | T ^c | Pitch lower than T. |
| ্ব | Ď | Pitch very low. |
| 5 guarded | D | e.g.— $\widetilde{\xi}$ Do, Stone. Pitch higher than D. |
| 4 | N | Pitch low. |
| a | P | Pitch very high. |
| Z4 | P' | Pitch lower than P. |
| ٦ | B, W, V | Pitch very deep. |
| भ" and o | | o (called o 五五元 La'-kor, cipher). Is sometimes placed on top of a letter, and stands for a final ng, or m, or ms. The pitch of 51° is low. |

| • Tibetan Character. | Romanized Equivalent. | Remarks. | | |
|-------------------------|--------------------------|--|--|--|
| र्ख | $\mathbf{T}\mathbf{s}$ | Pitch high. | | |
| あ | Ts' | Pitch lower than Ts. | | |
| Ę | Dz' | Pitch very low. | | |
| 긤 | w | Pitch low. | | |
| 9 | Źhy | Pitch very low. e.g., and ŻHYA-MO, Hat, pronounced almost like SHA-MO. | | |
| Э | Ż | e.g.,—¬¬¬¬¬¬¬¬¬¬¬¬¬¬¬¬¬¬¬¬¬¬¬¬¬¬¬¬¬¬¬¬¬¬¬ | | |
| Ą | 'A | When Q is a prefix, it is not transliterated at all in this work. Pitch very low. | | |
| W | Y | Pitch very low. | | |
| - 5 | R | Pitch low. | | |
| ผ | L | Lowest pitch of all. | | |
| 4 | Sh | | | |
| ZI. | S | Pitch high. | | |
| 5 | Н | Pitch very high. | | |
| ঙ | Α | Pitch low. | | |

Note.—The remarks in column 3 regarding Tonic Pitch refer to the Rev. Mr. Amundsen's Tone-system. I would, however, advise the student to direct his attention to the compactness or otherwise of his utterance, and to the shortness or length of his vowel-sounds, rather than to Pitch of Tone. See § 19.

Other letters, compound and reversed, are not included in the above tables. They are dealt with in §§ 4 et seq.

§ 3.—Phonetic Modifications of the Five Vowels. These are based on ""A, as representing any of the thirty consonants.

| Tibetan Sound. | Romanized Equivalent. | Remarks. |
|-------------------|--------------------------|--|
| ES 1 | a, | Short, hard and compact, as already explained. Ex. [ANN K'AM, Empire, Realm.] Pronounced, as regards the vowel-sound, exactly like that of the English word Come. IN differs from Q in that the latter is a long, slow and gentle emanation, while is uttered forcibly. |
| 점+비회. } 점+성. | ā | Long, like a in English far. Ex. TMQ K'A. Order, Command; ANN LA, A courteous |
| জ ৫ জ ৫ | ā | expression. Long, like a in far. Ex. To Ka-sha, A sort of grass; 5 A Ta-Le-La-ma, Dalar |
| 15 17 | â, ā, wā, | Lama, or ĞYÃ-WARIM-PO-CH'E; 黃常 L'Ā-SA Long, like the o in corner, or the aw in Bawl or the Chinese wā as in Kwān, in transliterations from Sanskrit, Indian, Chinese or other foreign languages. Thus, 天敬之、 RA-ME-SHÂ-RA, A holy place near Lanka or Ceylon; 夏河方 T'O-'U-KWĀN, Last Emperor |
| | | of China of the Tartar dynasty; 53 35555555555555566666666666666666666 |

| •Tibetan Sound. | Romanized Equivalent. | Remarks. |
|--|--------------------------|---|
| জ+ব } জ+ব } | ä | wise have read NGÄ-PO; 5 NÄÄÄÄÄÄÄPO, A district of Tibet south-east of Ü and Kongpo, which might otherwise have read GÄ-PO. Short, like a in can. Ex. NGÄÄÄ ZHYÄN-PA (pronounced ZHYÄM-PA) other; or, 55% DÄ'-PA, Faith. |
| 전 전 로 전 - 전 - 전 - 전 - 전 - 전 - 전 - 전 - 전 - 전 - | ä | Long, like a in can't, as pronounced by a Yankee. Ex. 多可称 NYE-NA, Disciple, Pupil: 頁句句 or GYA-PO, King. |
| ଔ` | i | Short, like i in is. Ex. ਪੀਰ ਪ YIN-PA (pronounced YIM-PA), To be. |
| क्ष+प. श्र+श. श्र+धश. | ï | Long, like i in ravine. Ex. 독리자다 Jt-PA, To be afraid; 디자 Ġt, A sign of the Agentive Case; 독립자자 Kyt-LA, Among, amid, in the midst. |
| ્ર કું | 1 | Also long, like i in ravine. Used in transliterations from foreign languages. Ex. A. Shi-la, Moral conduct; Sp. Fin Pun-da-Ri-ka, White lotus; Shri, Glory. |
| ঞ্ | е | Short, like a in made, or Italian e. Ex. 5. DE, The, That. |
| खो+माशः | | Like the preceding, but long. Ex. 직취지지 ĞĒ, |
| জ্+শ্ব | ē | Devil, Demon, Evil-spirit ; 취직각 SHE- |
| জী+এ | | PA, To know; NAT SEL-WA, OF SE-WA, To absolve. |

| Tibetan Sound. | Romanized Equivalent. | Remarks. |
|-------------------------------|--------------------------|---|
| હ્યે+ફ: } હ્યે+ ; } | è | Short, like e in get. Ex. & T Ch'èn-po (pronounced Ch'èm-po), Great, Big, Large; \$\frac{3}{3}\text{Ch'èn-po} J'è'-pa, To do, to act, to perform, to achieve. |
| Ŀ Ñ' | ai | Like i in mind. Ex. 제 'A' 되 KAI-LA-SHA, A mountain on the N. shore of Lake Manasarowar; 화충 MAITRI, Love, Friendship; 중입지 TAI-LING-GA, The modern Telingana. |
| ধ্য | u | Short, like u in pull. Ex. 55.7 Hur-po |
| জ্+শৃশ | ū | Long, like oo in snooze. Ex. 지율기자각 ŽHYU |
| දිය) දියය _ු | ū | Same as preceding. Ex. \$\bar{\bar{\bar{\bar{\bar{\bar{\bar{\bar |
| ાલુ+ન } લુ+ન } | ü | Like u in French une. Ex. 巧巧 Dun, Seven; 預行다 Ku'-PA, Thread. |
| क्षे+ज. } क्षे+গ. } | ü | Same as last, but long. Ex. 5% D'ü, Period, Time; YN YÜ, Land, Country. |
| (N) | 0 | Short, like o in for, or rock. This is the commonest o in Tibetan. Ex. Tom, |

| • Tibetan Sound. | Romanized Equivalent. | Remarks. |
|---------------------|--------------------------|---|
| | | Bazaar; 以刊道 YA'-PO, Good; 克蓋克 Zo-WA, To build; 河 Lo, Year; 資流 K'YI-MO, Bitch; 黃河 J'O-WO, Nobleman, master, lord; 河南 Po-'o, Grandfather. |
| ह्य +माश्र | ō | Long, like o in mode. Ex. 출피자 Ts'ō, A crowd, a multitude. |
| <u>ક્ષ</u> ્ | ō | Like the last. Used only in transliterating. Ex. 75% Gō-TA-MA, Buddha's name. |
| জ + ব } জ + ব } | ö | Short, like eu in French Jeune. Ex. ১মূর্ম Gön-pa (pronounced Gön-pa), A monastery; উত্ত্যের Chö'-pän, Diadem. |
| জ + ম } জ + ম } | ð | Same as last, but long. Ex. AN CH'Ö, Religion; 35A NYA-D'Ö, Fishing net. |
|) <u>S</u> | au, ou | Like ou in Noumenon. Ex. $\widetilde{\eta}$ and Gou-rima. Sometimes also spelt \widetilde{u} and \widetilde{u} or \widetilde{u} and \widetilde{u} are \widetilde{u} and \widetilde{u} are \widetilde{u} and \widetilde{u} are \widetilde{u} and \widetilde{u} are \widetilde{u} and \widetilde{u} are \widetilde{u} and \widetilde{u} are \widetilde{u} are \widetilde{u} are \widetilde{u} and \widetilde{u} are \widetilde{u} and \widetilde{u} are \widetilde{u} are \widetilde{u} are \widetilde{u} and \widetilde{u} are \widetilde{u} are \widetilde{u} are \widetilde{u} are \widetilde{u} are \widetilde{u} and \widetilde{u} are \widetilde{u} and \widetilde{u} are \widetilde{u} are \widetilde{u} are \widetilde{u} are \widetilde{u} are \widetilde{u} and \widetilde{u} are \widetilde{u} are \widetilde{u} are \widetilde{u} and \widetilde{u} are \widetilde{u} are \widetilde{u} are \widetilde{u} and \widetilde{u} are \widetilde{u} are \widetilde{u} and \widetilde{u} are \widetilde{u} are \widetilde{u} and \widetilde{u} are \widetilde{u} are \widetilde{u} are \widetilde{u} are \widetilde{u} and \widetilde{u} are \widetilde{u} and \widetilde{u} are \widetilde{u} are \widetilde{u} are \widetilde{u} are \widetilde{u} and \widetilde{u} are \widetilde{u} are \widetilde{u} are \widetilde{u} and \widetilde{u} are |

Notes.

1.—In the above Tabular Statement the sign + in column 1 means "as modified by the addition of." It will be seen that the basic, inherent "a is subject to modifications, not only when quali-

fied by vowel-signs, but also when followed or subjoined by 冯'a, or when subjoined by 马' Ha, or a wa-zur, or when followed by 马' Na, 冯' La, 马' Da, 冯' Sa, and ¬凡' G'a-sa, which last is sometimes represented by the abbreviation 己 Ta-log-ta, i.e. Ta reversed, and called ¬凡' Ta G'a-sa-da-kyo.

2.—In words containing those vowel-modifications which are affected by A' la, the A' when pronounced, should be uttered very softly. Often it is not pronounced at all. e.g., 554 NGÜL, or NGÜ, Money: ANCE SÖL-J'A, or SÖ-J'A, Tea.

Where A, as a final, is followed by the particle A wa, the latter, in the Colloquial, is often changed into T. ra. e.g., A To Sacrifice (Honorific form). Sometimes, however, A is merely duplicated. See § 18.

3.—In the pronunciation of words containing those vowel-modifications which are affected by 5° D'a, or 5° G'a, or sometimes 5° N° G'a-sa, the following peculiarity should be noted. In the case of monosyllabic words or final syllables ending in one of the above letters, such letter is not exactly pronounced. Yet it is hinted at; for, just before pronouncing it, the speaker stops short, and, by a sharp contraction of the glottis, forms a kind of innominate sound, which perhaps is best described by reference to the Persian or Arabic & 'ain, or to the curious throat-sound emitted by some Glaswegians when, instead of saying Saturday, they say Se'urday, or instead of saying water, they say wa'er. This emphasized hiatus-sound will be represented by an apostrophe. Ex. 55° N° J'E'-PA, To do; 55° CH'A', Hand (Honorific term);

- ইন্ট্রাজ Nyr-চত', Parasol. In particular, as regards syllables ending in স্' G'a, the following rules may be observed:—
 - (a) When the syllable forms a word by itself, like ইনা Chi'
 (Chig'), A, an; বুলা Du' (Dug), Is; or ব্লা Sho'
 (Shog'), Imperative of আম্ম Yong-wa, To come, the না
 G'a should never be pronounced, but only hinted at, in manner above described.
 - (b) When the syllable in which 되 or 되지 occurs is only one in a word of two or more syllables, and is not the final syllable, the 되 or 되지 may be pronounced, or only hinted at, at pleasure. Ex. ই리·디 Dig'-PA, or Di'-PA, Sin: 支司支司 Dog-Dog, or Do'-Do', A Lump; 以可以 YAG-PO, or YA'-PO, Good; 되う되지 ઉΥΘ-PO, or GYOG-PO, Quick.
 - (c) Practically the same rules may be observed as regards final 이 la. Ex. 디어 NGĂ, Fatigue, and 질리다 ĎELWA, or ĎE-WA, To fasten on.
- 4.—A consonant, having a prefix, but no affix, nor any qualifying vowel-sign, must be supported by the lengthening affix \mathbf{Q}^{\bullet} 'a, which prevents the prefix from being mistaken for an initial letter. Ex. $\mathbf{Q}^{\bullet}\mathbf{Q}^{\bullet}$ K'A, Order, command, word; $\mathbf{Q}^{\bullet}\mathbf{Q}^{\bullet}$ D'A, Arrow.
- 5.—A. B, is usually pronounced W, when, in a word of more than one syllable, it is the initial letter of the second or other following syllable, and the final letter of the immediately preceding syllable is either E.A. T. or A., or if such preceding syllable does not end in a consonant, but is governed by inherent W, or one of the

vowel-signs. $\[\]$ also takes the sound of w when it is prefixed by $\[\]$, $\[\dot{D}a$, and has no modifying vowel-sign or Yata sign. In the latter case it takes the sound of the modifyng signs. Ex.:— $\[\]$ $\[\]$

The letter \mathfrak{I}^* Ba, when sounding as a w, and followed by \mathfrak{I}^* i, is pronounced somewhat like the hard Russian vowel of, but with a w before it, or something like the English word way, save that the a must be given the vowel-sound of \mathfrak{I}^* , and merged into the succeeding i, so as to make the two into a sort of diphthongal sound.

Second vowels, following immediately after a simple or compound consonant, whether qualified by a vowel-sign or not, are always based on R' 'a, not on W a. Ex. 73.5% not 73.5% GAU-TA-MA; AG LE-U, Chapter; AG MI-U, Little man.

§ 4.—The six beversed (i.e. 🏋 Lo') letters. Used chiefly in transliterations from Sanskrit, Pāli, etc.

| Letter. | Name. | Romanized Equivalent. | Remarks. |
|---------|-------------------------------------|--------------------------|--|
| 5 | Ta-log-ţa or Ga-sa-da Kyó | T | The dental letter 5 Ta reversed and pronounced as a palatal. A common abbreviation for the double affix \(\mathbf{T}\)\(|
| B | T'a-log'ț'a | Ţ, | \mathfrak{A}^{\bullet} $T'a$ reversed, and pronounced as an aspirated palatal. |
| ځ | Ďa-loģ-ḍa | Ď | 5 Da reversed, and pronounced as an unaspirated palatal, much as some Irishmen pronounce the th in think. |
| م | Na-loģ-ņa | Ņ | The dental letter \P Na reversed, and pronounced as a palatal. |
| Pr | Sha-log-Kʻa | K' | \mathcal{F} Sha reversed, and pronounced like \mathcal{F} K a. |
| 昆 | Ka-Sha-log-tā- pa (지기자기) K'ya | K'y | \mathfrak{M} Ka , with a reversed \mathfrak{S} Sha subjoined. Pronounced like \mathfrak{S} $K'ya$, strongly aspirated. |

3

- § 5.—The seven consonants to which W Ya, in the form of J, may be subjoined. W so subjoined is called W 757 or W 757 Ya-ta, Ya-subjoined.
 - This is Kya, and it is so pronounced.
 - \Box This is K'ya, and it is so pronounced.
 - This is Gya, and it is pronounced as some Irishmen pronounce Garden, guide, etc., i.e. Gyarden, Gyide, etc.
 - This is Pya, but YA-TA changes the pronunciation into that of S. Cha.
 - This is P'ya, but YA-TA, changes the pronunciation into that of & Ch'a.
 - This is Bya but YA-TA' changes the pronunciation into that of E' That is to say, when J' is an initial, it is pronounced J', which is practically like J' Cha; when not an initial, it is pronounced J. If prefixed by J' Da, it is pronounced Y; and if further qualified by a vowel-sign, it takes the Y sound merged into the vowel-sound. Ex. JJT YAB, Summer; JJTN YUG-PA, or YU'-PA, To brandish, flourish; JJTN YEN-CH'E-WA, To separate.
 - This is Mya, but YA-TA changes the pronunciation to that of 3° Nya.

§ 6.—The fourteen consonants to which \mathbf{x} : Ra, in the form of \mathbf{x} , may be subjoined. \mathbf{x} so subjoined is called \mathbf{x} or \mathbf{x} , \mathbf{x} ,

| Letter. | Name. | Romanized Equivalent. | Remarks. |
|----------|----------------|--------------------------|--|
| ĘŢ | Ka-ra-tā-Ṭa | Ţ | Like 7 |
| H | Kʻa-ra-tā-Ţʻa | Ţ, | |
| 町 | Ga-ra-tā-Ņa | Ď | · · · · · · |
| 5 | Ta-ra-tā-Ṭa | Ţ | |
| ঘ্ৰ | Tʻa-ra-tā-Ţʻa | Ţ' | P' |
| -5 | Ďa-ra-tā-Ņa | Ď | All palatals. |
| 5 | Na-ra-tā-Ņa | Ņ | ্ন ্ |
| 777 | Pa-ra-tā-Ṭa | Ţ | 7 |
| 4 | P'a-ra-tā-Ţ'a | Ţ' | P |
| 4 | Ba-ra-tā-Ḍa | Ď | |
| শ্ব | Ma-ra-tā-Ma | M | |
| A | Sha-ra-tā-Shra | Shr | |
| 1 | Sa-ra-tā-Sa | S | This is the pronunciation in Literary Tibetan and in Sikhim and Bütän. |
| | Sa-ra-tā-Ṭa | Ţ | This palatal pronunciation is the pronunciation in 독명자격자 Ü-P'Ā-KĀ', Colloquial of Ü. |
| | Sa-ra-tā-Hra | Hr | Pronunciation in স্বাহ্মের সূত্র Tsang-p'ä- kä', Colloquial of Tsang. |
| 5 | Ha-ra-tā-Hra | Hr | |

§ 7.—The six consonants to which 5 Ha, in the form 5 (5.7578) Ha-ta), may be subjoined.

With the exception of \S $L'\bar{a}$ (commonly seen $Lh\bar{a}$), which is frequently met with, these Ha-compounds are only used in transliterations from Sanskrit, Pāli, etc. The effect of subjoining \S Ha, is to lengthen and slightly aspirate the consonant. Ex. \S \S $L'\bar{a}$ -SA, $Lh\bar{a}sa$, the Capital of Tibet.

된 $G'\bar{a}$. $\xi' D'\bar{a} ext{ (Dental)}$ 된 $B'\bar{a}$. $E' Dz'\bar{a}$. $E' D'\bar{a} ext{ (Palatal)}$ 된 $L'\bar{a}$.

§ 8.—The six silent consonants to which A' La (A'A578' La-ta) is subjoined.

The effect of subjoining the A' is to raise and emphasize the tone, and to make the sound more compact.

지 및 급 급 점 All pronounced 다 La.
Pronounced Da.

EXAMPLES:—周河下 La'kor, Cipher, such as o, the abbreviated & or 下; 周 Lu, Serpent-demon; 河河 Ci Lõé-PA, To read; 周河 苍下 La'-chor, or Läé-chor, Clamour, noise, (Literary); 副天口 Lěn-PA, Stupid, foolish; 副口 DA-WA, Month, moon; 哥哥 La-MA, Lama; 是它 Lung, Wind; 河口口 Lor-PA, To learn, teach.

§ 9.—The sixteen consonants to which HET WA-ZUR, IN THE FORM OF 4, IS SUBJOINED.

J is called WA-ZUR because it is a corner of the letter T Wa.

When scholars from Tibet first visited India to study Buddhistic

Mr

Literature, they did not realize that the Tibetan letter \mathfrak{T}^* represented both B and W (which in Sanskrit are denoted by \mathfrak{T} and \mathfrak{T}^*), just as the Bengali letter \mathfrak{T} represents them, and that \mathfrak{T}^* Wa was therefore unnecessary. The later scholars, however, did realize it, and since then \mathfrak{T}^* Wa has not been much used in Tibetan. It still survives, however, in some words, and in the form of A Wa-źur, subjoined to the consonants now under notice.

As regards Tibetan words, the effect of subjoining \triangleleft is merely to lengthen somewhat the sound of the vowel inherent in, or qualifying, the consonant. In the following examples the vowel-sound is the inherent \mathfrak{S} \mathfrak{a} , which, when lengthened, is $\bar{\mathfrak{a}}$. Thus:—

n Ka, Oh!

ரு. Ka-ye, Oh! Holla!

5.5 K'A-TA, Crow, Magpie.

সু'ঝ' DA-PA, Mouth.

지겠다'피' LAB-DA, School.

5'T' Ďā-wa, A Medical plant.

TSA, Spunk, tinder.

₹ TsA, Grass, herb.

TSA K'A, Pasture.

க் Ts'ā, Salt.

g or இல் Źнул, or Źнул-мо, Hat, cap.

∄ Žā, Nettle.

ਨ Ra, ਨੁੱਛੋਂ Ra-cho, Horn, sting.

নিশ্ন T'AG-RA, or T'A'-RA, Hartshorn.

ATT LA-WA, A species of deer.

The Sha, Flood, high water.

The Sha-Wa, Deer.

The Sha-Wa, Deer.

The Sha-P'o, Stag, buck.

The Sha-Mo, Doe, hind.

The Sha-To, Young deer.

WA-ZUR is also used to represent the sound of $w\bar{a}$, as found in old Tibetan literature, and in Sanskrit, Pāli, Chinese, and other ancient foreign languages. Ex:—

স্নাম Hwa, Sugared medicine like lozenges (old Tibetan).

ระสิ ฯ Ra-ме-shwā-Ra, Rameshwar, near Ceylon.

র্বিত্রশার T'o-u kwan, Last Emperor of China of the Tartar dynasty.

5ຊີ ຊື້ອີ ຈື່ວຸ້ວີ DWAI- CH'IN-B'A-DUR, A Mongolian king of Tibet.

컴퓨터 SWA-B'A-T'AN, Name of a town.

It also represents the sound of \hat{a} as found in modern Indian languages, e.g. Bengali, in which that sound and $w\bar{a}$ seem to be interchangeable. Ex. Swadesi, Shâdeshi.

WA-ŹUR also sometimes serves to show that a letter which might possibly be mistaken for a prefix is really an initial. Ex. 5 T T ĎANG-PO, Clear; 5 T N Ť ĎA'-PO, A district in Tibet. If the WA-ŹUR had not been subjoined to the 5 in these words, one might have read them NGĂ-PO, and ĠĀ-PO.

§ 10.—The twelve consonants on which the silent NATI Ra-Go-Ra-Heda is placed. The effect is to raise the tonic-pitch and emphasize the sound of each consonant, except those that are regarded as masculine. As to masculine letters see § 19. Sign with Romanized equivalent, above.

It will be noticed that \mathfrak{P} Ka, \mathfrak{F} Ta, \mathfrak{F} Tsa, have not got above them the sign for heightening the Tonic-pitch, they being masculine letters and not requiring it.

§ 11.—The ten consonants on which the silent and La-go, La-Head, is placed. It has the same effect as the Ra-Head. Sign \smile .

위
$$Ka$$
, 위 Ga , 원 Nga , 왕 Cha , 월 Ja , 왕 Ta , 왕 Da , 왕 Pa , 왕 Ba , 왕 $L^c\bar{a}$.

§ 12.—The twelve consonants on which the silent Non Sa-Go, Sa-Head, is placed. It also has the same effect as the Ra-Head. Sign .

팅 Ka, 팀 Ğa, 틸 Nga, 팅 Nya, 팅 Ta. 팅 Da, 팅 Na. 팀 Pa. 팀 Ba, 틸 Ma, 및 Tsa, 팅 Dz'a. § 13.——NGRA THE FIVE PREFIXES, i.e. silent letters, which are prefixed to divers Initial (sometimes called Radical) letters, simple and complex, in the formation of words. Their effect is to remove the aspirate, if any, of low-toned, i.e. Feminine and Very Feminine initials, and to raise the Tonic Pitch, and make the sound more compact. Thus, take \(\subseteq \textsup \textsup \) J'ung, the Perfect and Imperative root of \(\supple \subseteq \textsup \texts

These prefixes are really a kind of Prepositive Affixes, sometimes modifying the meaning of a word, and sometimes entering into the formation of the Present, Perfect and Future Tenses of a verb. Though doubtless once upon a time actually pronounced, they are now generally silent. In the case, however, of \(\Pi\), \(\Pi\), and \(\Pi\), when the syllable in which any of them occurs is preceded by a syllable ending in a vowel-sound, the \(\Pi\), \(\Pi\), or \(\Pi\) is often carried back in pronunciation to the vowel-sound and sounded with it. The prefixes \(\Pi\) and \(\Pi\) are never sounded or carried back. As regards \(\Pi\) and \(\Pi\) the Colloquial has a curious custom of transmuting them into the sound of \(\Pi\). Ex. \(\Pi\)\(\Pi\)\(\Pi\)\(\Pi\) ME-B'A is pronounced MEN-B'A, Gun; \(\Pi\)\(\Pi\)\(\Pi\)\(\Pi\)\(\Pi\) is pronounced MIN-BU', Is not; \(\Pi\)\(\Pi\)\(\Pi\)\(\Pi\). DA-DA is pronounced DAN-BA, similar. Also \(\Pi\), as a prefix, is sometimes given the sound of \(\Pi\)' m. Ex. \(\Pi\)\(\Pi\)\(\Pi\)\(\Pi\).

No letters are ever superposed upon or subjoined to any prefix; and, as will be seen when we come to the paragraph on

- from those of the same letters as Initials, or even as Affixes, save in the case of 51 which is always Very Feminine.
- 可 Ġa. This prefix is of Common Gender, and it is found before the following Initials, namely, 云 Cha, ℥ Nya, ℥ Ta, ℥ Ďa, ℥ Na, ℥ Tsa, ℥ Žhya, ℥ Ža, ⅄ Ya, Ք Sha, and ⅄ Sa, all of which retain their natural sounds unaffected by the 哥 save as regards Tonic Pitch and compactness of utterance, as already explained. This prefix is found in many nouns. It also enters into the formation of the Present and Future Roots of certain verbs. Ex. གནན ཚང་ སོར་བང་ឧភភ, Inn; བདང་ Tong, Present Root, and བདང་ Tang, Future Root, of གདང་བ་ Tong-wa, To send, dismiss.
- う Ďa. This prefix is of COMMON GENDER, and is met with before the following Initial letters, namely, 可 Ka, 可 Ġa, こ Nga, 리 Pa, □ Ba, and 리 Ma, and nine other letters which are merely compounds of these with Ya-tā', or Ra-tā'. It also enters into the formation of the Future Root of certain verbs. Ex. う気心 ヴ, Future Root of スラスギュ BÖ-WA, To offer; う可見 ĞAB, Future Root of スラスギュ ĞEB-PA, To cover.

- 所 Ma. This prefix is of VERY FEMININE GENDER, and occurs before 下 Ka, 可 Ga, こ Nga, & Ch'a, E Ja, う Nya, 気 T'a, 5 Ďa, 気 Na, 巻 Ts'a, É Dz'a and four other letters, compounds of some of the foregoing in Ya-tā, or Ra-tā.
- Y. Y. This Prefix is of FEMININE GENDER, and is found before 下 K'a, 可 Ġa, ま Ch'a, E Ja, 写 T'a, 写 Ďa, ヹ P'a, 耳 Ba, ま Ts'a, Ĕ Dz'a, and nine other letters, compounds of some of the foregoing in Ya-tā, or Ra-tā.

The raising-power (if any) of these prefixes, as regards Tone, depends upon their gender as mentioned above, the masculine prefix ∇Ba possessing the greatest power.

§ 14.—The following Tabular Statement of the consonants (in their simple form) which, as Initial Radical letters, take prefixes, and of the particular prefix or prefixes which, and which alone, each such consonant takes, may be found of use, especially in cases where the student feels some difficulty in determining whether any particular letter is or is not a prefix. For instance, no letter except $\mathbf{5}^{\bullet}$ $\dot{D}a$, or $\mathbf{5}^{\bullet}$ Ba, immediately preceding a $\mathbf{5}^{\bullet}$ Ka, can be a prefix; no letter except $\mathbf{5}^{\bullet}$ Ma, or $\mathbf{5}^{\bullet}$ A, immediately preceding a $\mathbf{5}^{\bullet}$ Ka, can be a prefix; and so on.

| Radical | Prefix or Prefixes taken. | Example. |
|---------|---------------------------------|--------------------------|
| η | 5 | र्गार दें Kar-po, White. |

| Initial or Radical letter. | Prefix or Prefixes taken. | Example. |
|----------------------------------|---------------------------------|--|
| P | ह्य | ठाट्र रॉ. K'än-po, Abbot. |
| | R | ABTO K'yer-wa, or ABTO K'ur-wa, To carry away. |
| 피 | 5 | ্বার্'ন' G'ā-wa, Joy, Happiness. |
| | ឯ | यमीमाह्य Ge, Demon. |
| | ম | মর্নি Ğo, Head. |
| | ٩ | ੨ਗੁੰਕਾੜਾ <i>ੌyē-wa</i> , To fall, Stumble. |
| 5 | 5 | 55A. Ngu, Money, Silver. |
| | য | ম্ন্নে Ngar-mo, Sweet. |
| रु | 피 | ন্ট্ন্'ম' Chog-pa, To break (Transitive). |
| | D | নতুদা্ম Chug-pa, To allow. |
| ಹ | ন | ਕੱਡ ਵੇਂ Ch'o-to, Beak. |
| | ત | ⊂දසහ Ch'am, Masquerade. |
| E | D | ন্ম নিট্র্ Zi-ji', Glory, Splendour. |
| | ह्य | ਲਵਕਾਰ Jä-wa, To meet. |
| | લ | ন্ট্ৰাহ্মান্ম Jī-pa, To be afraid. |
| 3 | ন | নান্ত্ৰ স্পূল-ts'ang, Pantry. |
| | ٦ | ਸ੍ਲ੍ਹੇਕਾਰ Nyē-wa, To ferment. |
| | N | মন্ত্রম্ম Nyèn-sä'-pa, To rouse. |

| Initial or Radical letter. | Prefix or Prefixes taken. | Example. |
|----------------------------------|---------------------------------|--|
| 5 | ব | ন্5ম Tam, Rumour. |
| | 7 | ন্ট্র্ন Tön-pa, To cast out. |
| ঘ | হা | মহ্ব' T''ā, End. |
| | ٩ | ব্রুমান T'ung-wa, To drink. |
| 5 | 7] | দ্ব্দি Dong, Face. |
| | 7 | নই ইনি De-po, Good, Well. |
| | 81 | राप्तुः D'ā, Arrow. |
| | ٩ | ৭্র্মাম Dam-pa, To choose. |
| ্ৰ | শ | দ্বিদ্দা Nō'-pa, Injury. |
| | 7 | বঙ্গুই'ব' <i>Nar-wa</i> , To lengthen, Extend. |
| | ম | মার্ব্ N'ā, Oath. |
| 4 | 5 | รุฆุธัชั Pang-po, Witness. |
| শ | ۹ | ব্ৰথম P'e-wa, To increase. |
| ٦ | 5 | ব্রদার Ü, Breath; ব্রুমণা Yar-ka, Summer. |
| | ď | ਕ੍ਰਨ-ਸਾ Bar-wa, To blaze up. |
| ম | 5 | ব্যাস্টা <i>Mag-mi</i> , Soldier. |
| र्ड | ্স | দার্ভন নি Tsang-po, River. |
| | 7 | ্বউন্নেদ Tsōn-K'ang, Prison, Jail. |

| nitial or Radical letter. | Prefix or Prefixes taken. | Example. |
|---------------------------------|---------------------------------|---|
| దే | হা | రెస్ట్ Ts'o, Lake. |
| | ď | মূল্ম Ts'ig'-pa, To burn (Intransitive). |
| É | 7 | স্টুর Dzün, Lie, Falsehood. |
| | 51 | हाईश्राप्त Dzē-po, Lovely. |
| | ٩ | GÉC'S' Dzing-ra, Fortification. |
| 긤 | None. | |
| ৰ | না | স্ত্র শ্রম Źhyān-pa (pro. Źhyām-pa), Another. |
| | 7 | ন্দ'ন্ত্রি, Nang-z'hyin, According to. |
| Ę | ্ৰ শ | নাৰুনাশ্ন'শ্ন' <i>দ্ৰা</i> -po, Body. |
| | 7 | ਹੁੜ੍ਹੇ Z'ob-ta, Likeness. |
| ď | None. | |
| শ | ন | ন্দ্ৰে', or Ÿaġ, Bull, Yak. |
| 5 | 7 | ರ್ನ್.9. Ľa-sha, Thigh. |
| ผ | None. | |
| 9 | | ក្សិក្សិក្សិក្សិក្សិក្សិក្សិក្សិក្សិក្សិ |
| | 'n | ਹ-95'ਹ' Shā'-pa, To tell. |

| | Prefix or Prefixes taken. | Example. |
|--------------|---------------------------------|---|
| ** | F 0 | ন্ধ্যেন্ট Sā-po, Bright, Clear. বর্মিন্নিন্দ্রিন স্ক'-de kam-po, Misfortune. |
| ⁵ | None. | |

NOTES.

- 2.—In the case of a two-letter syllable, whenever the second letter is qualified by a vowel-sign, or is otherwise complex, the first letter, if one of the five mentioned in § 13, may be taken to be a Prefix.

 Ex. 表 。 Ts'o, A lake; 又可意义。 Ta-mi-sht, Calamity.
- 3.—In the case of a two-letter syllable in which both letters are simple letters, then, even if the first letter is one of the five mentioned in § 13, it is not a Prefix, but an Initial or Radical. Ex.— 지기기기 BA'-GA', Cake of tea; 지기기기 BAB-YONG-WA, To descend.
- 4.—In the case of a syllable consisting of more than two letters, the first, if one of the five mentioned in § 13, may be taken to be a

- Ex. $\mathbb{Q}\mathbb{Q}\mathbb{Q}\mathbb{Q}$ (the Literary form of $\mathbb{Q}\mathbb{Q}\mathbb{Q}\mathbb{Q}$) Bab-pa, To descend; $\mathbb{Q}\mathbb{Q}\mathbb{Q}\mathbb{Q}$ K'än-po, Abbot; $\mathbb{Q}\mathbb{Q}\mathbb{Q}\mathbb{Q}$ Kö'pa, To create. Very rarely it is otherwise, as in the case of the \mathbb{Q} in the word $\mathbb{Q}\mathbb{Q}\mathbb{Q}\mathbb{Q}$ RI-DA, Wild animal. Such words are often written with a wa-zur under the \mathbb{Q} , to show that it is not a Prefix, but an Initial. Thus $\mathbb{Q}\mathbb{Q}\mathbb{Q}\mathbb{Q}$. It is then still pronounced RI-DA.
- 5.—Should the Prefix be 5, and the Initial be simple \$\mathbb{T}\$, then \$\mathbb{T}\$ loses its b sound, and is pronounced w, or w as modified by the next letter, if any, such as \$\mathbb{T}\$ Na, \$\mathbb{N}\$ La, or \$\mathbb{N}\$ Sa (see Vowel Modifications, \$\mathbb{3}\$). Should, however, the \$\mathbb{T}\$ be accompanied by \$\to\$ (ya-t\bar{a}\$), or any vowel-sign, it similarly loses its w sound, and takes that of the ya-t\bar{a}\$ or of the vowel-sign. Ex.—\$\mathbb{T}\$ Not Bang, but \$\mathbb{M}\$ Authority, Power; \$\mathbb{T}\$ A place in Tibet; \$\mathbb{T}\$ On-po, Nephew of a Lama. If the \$\mathbb{T}\$ be accompanied by \$\mathbb{T}\$ (Ra-t\bar{a}\$), it acquires the sound of \$\dar{a}\$, i.e. palatal \$d\$ (see \$\mathbb{6}\$). Ex.—\$\mathbb{T}\$ \$\mathbb{D}\$ A, Name of a Tibetan tribe; \$\mathbb{T}\$ \$\mathbb{D}\$ A' Interstice.

§ 15.—PECULIARITIES OF PRONUNCIATION.

1.—When a syllable beginning with one of the Prefixes , or , or , follows another syllable ending in a vowel-sound, the Prefix is often in the Colloquial carried back, sometimes with its own sound, sometimes with a changed sound, to the preceding syllable, and pronounced as if it were part of it. Ex.—

ব্যু-স্ট্রা Chu-chi', pronounced Chuć-chi', Eleven.

বস্তু বন্ধি Сно-źнуг, pronounced Снов-źнуг, Fourteen.

ਨ੍ਤੇ Ra-z'ı, pronounced Rab-z'ı, Drunk.

সাব স্ট্রনার্মন (Hon.) K'ā-kyön-nang-wa, pronounced K'āb-kyön-nang-nga, To censure.

বু'বারার' (Hon.) NA-ই'ম, pronounced NAM-ই'ম, Clock, Clothes.

সাই K'a-ch'u, pronounced K'am-ch'u, Law suit.

Wসর্ক্র্র্ Ya-Ts'än-po, pronounced Yam-Ts'äm-po. Astonishing.

2.—The Prefixes 5 and 6 are never themselves carried back; but in the case of 6 and also of 6 the sound of 6 is sometimes substituted, and pronounced with the preceding syllable. Ex.—

মার্থি বিদ্বিদ্ধি T'o-চত', pronounced T'on-চত', Ambition.

মীব্ৰ্ণা Mi-bu', pronounced Min-bu', Is not, are not.

্রন্থ (Hon.) Ge-চল্ম, pronounced Gen-চল্ম, Clergy.

ন্থের্ম্বর্ম (Hon.) Źнүй-рам, pronounced Źнүйн-рам, Cheek.

র্বির্বিশ্রাব্রা Nön-BE TĂ'-PA, pronounced Nöm-BE TĂ'-PA.

To add.

রী'মাব্ব' Me-B'ম, pronounced Men-B'ম, Gun.

ন্ত্ৰী'ম্ব্ৰা' Me-da', pronounced Men-da', Ember.

3.—Even when the first syllable ends in \P , the same custom sometimes holds, probably because of the incomplete way in which final \P is uttered, the syllable therefore seeming to end in a vowel-sound. Ex.—

ყურენ (Hon.) Ch'ad-bu', or Ch'a'-bu', pronounced Ch'an-bu', Knot.

4.—The sound of n is sometimes transmuted into that of m. Ex.—

NATO K'AN-PO, pronounced K'AM-PO, Abbot.

মৌর্মা Yin-Pa, pronounced Yim-Pa, To be (copula).

ফুর্ব্বিম্মুর্থ Nön-be ṭā'-pa, pronounced Nöm-be ṭā'-pa, To add.

স্প্রতি Zhyän-pa, pronounced Zhyäm-pa, Other.

5.—The sound of \mathbb{A}^* as final of first syllable is also sometimes changed into that of m. Ex.—

ਮਾਰੂਕਾਨਨ (Hon.) Gü-ch'am, pronounced Gun-ch'am, Catarrh.

ক্র্মানার্কর উপন্ন-Ts'an, pronounced Gyan-Ts'an, Banner of Victory.

6.—The sounds that are latent in superadded letters, sometimes result in audible sounds, pronounced with the preceding syllable. Ex.—

দ্ধিন সূত্র (Hon.) Sö-bong, pronounced Sön-bong, Churn.

E'A'S J'A-BONG, pronounced J'An-BONG, Tea churn.

จิธัญ" Ch'o-ที่ga, pronounced Ch'ö-ทัga, Fifteen.

মঠি বি Ch'ö'-ten, pronounced Ch'ör-ten, A monument containing the ashes of a saint or other relics.

হাঁহ'ল Ser-ka, pronounced Se-ka, Chink.

WATA YAR-LA, pronounced WA YA-LA, Above.

קאָ־מִי Bar-la, pronounced Ba-la, Between.

5ξ. Ďur-Ţ'ö', pronounced Ďu-Ţ'ö', Cemetery.

৪২% 'UR-pa, pronounced U-pa, Noise.

รุกรุวัพีล Kar-yö, pronounced Ka-yö, Earthen mug or cup.

KK TSAR, pronounced TSA, Margin

নাহাঁম Ser, pronounced Se, Gold.

RANTE K'AR-NGA, pronounced K'A-NGA, Gong.

শ্বাহাত Sar-Pa, pronounced Sa-Pa, New.

- 8.—When the first of two syllables ends in a vowel-sound, and the next syllable consists of \Im^*wa , the latter often takes the sound of a. Ex.— $\Im^*\Im^*$ Chu-wa, pronounced Chu-A, Dung of cattle.
- 9.—The following is a common case of ∇ wa, or ∇ pa, being reduced to the sound of a:

স্তিশ্বাইন Yö'-wa-Rè pronounced Yaw-a-Rè'. Is, are, was, were (in the sense of possibly or probably being).

10.—When the first of two syllables ends in \mathfrak{A} , and the next syllable is \mathfrak{A} wa, the latter is often pronounced as \mathfrak{A} ra, but sometimes it is reduced to a mere a. Ex.—

স্থান্ত্র (Hon.) Jä-wa Mang-wa, pronounced Jä-ra Mang-nga, To meet.

অ্র'ব' Yö-wa, pronounced Yöl-A, Curtain.

11.—The above are samples of irregularities with which one sometimes meets; practice alone will enable the student to know when other words similarly spelt follow these Colloquial customs, and when they ought to be pronounced according to the regular rules. The following are a few more specimens of irregular pronunciations:—

ਮੋਂ ਨੂੰ Ma-nyong, pronounced Ma-nyung, Never.

মুম'ন্ম'নু' Sü she kyi bu', pronounced Sü shin-ći bu', Who knows?

지역자자 시시 LÄ SHÄ'-PA pronounced K'AB-LÄ SHÄ'-PA,

To chat.

ইবিমা (Hon.) P'eb-pa, pronounced P'e-pa, To arrive, depart, come, go.

মন্ত্রনাম (Hon.) ŽΗΥυ-BÖ, pronounced ŽΗΥυΜ-BÖ, Mattress.

প্রথম (Hon.) Źнүй-ва', pronounced Źнүйм-ва', Mask.

ਤ੍ਰੇ ਤ੍ਰੇ ਪ L'a-pi-pa, pronounced L'ab-ri-pa, Painter.

মুন্মান Mön-Lam, pronounced Mö-Lam, Prayer.

মুব্যাসন্ত Kyab-gön, pronounced Kyam-gön, Helper, Protector, Saviour.

§ 16.—The Ten Consonantal Affixes, called ENGENTS JE-JU' CHU, each of which, when following an Initial, simple or complex, completes the formation of a syllable.

Of these \P , Γ , Π , and Π are frequently seen with an additional silent Π , or Second Affix, called $\Pi \Gamma \Pi$ Yang-Ju'. They are then called Double Affixes.

Another kind of DOUBLE AFFIXES is met with in old Tibetan books. It is very rare, but for Literary purposes the student may as well make a note of it. It consists of 5° Na, 5° Ra, or 1° La, followed by 5° Da, here called 5° 5° 1° Da-DA, Hard D. Thus:—

It is used to express the Past Tense. Ex:-

TINST'U' SAND-PA, He heard.

ਗੁਨ੍ਨਾਧਾ Gyurd-pa, He became.

নাইনিস্মা Söld-PA, He requested.

The modern Literary practice, however, is to omit the final 5, which may be regarded as obsolete.

As to the pronunciation of the affixes \P , \P , \P , \P , \P , \P , see § 3, Tabular Statement of Vowel Modifications, and Notes thereto.

The DICTIONARY ORDER of the above-mentioned ten Consonantal Finals, and of the four Double Finals in N, is as follows:—

| 1. | শ্ | •• | ga. | 8. | 141 | | b́а-sа. |
|----|----------|-----|---------|-----|-------------|------|---------|
| 2. | मोश. | | ga-sa. | 9. | 21. | ' /a | ma. |
| 3, | Ľ | | nga. | 10. | <i>험</i> 쇠. | •• | ma-sa. |
| 4. | 다. | ••• | nga-sa. | 11. | д. | | 'a. |
| 5. | 5 | • • | da. | 12. | ₹ | •• | ra. |
| 6. | ሻ | • | na. | 13. | ୟ" | • | la. |
| 7. | ন' | | b́а. | 14. | ঝ. | •• | sa. |

The above, of course, is their order under each letter of the TA KA-K'A; that is to say, it is their order after, or in subordination to, the Alphabetical Order, if that term may be used in connection with the TA

As to the Gender of the Ten Final Affixes, see § 19.

•
$$\widetilde{\mathfrak{A}}$$
 \widetilde{G} $\widetilde{\mathfrak{A}}$ \widetilde{G} $\widetilde{\mathfrak{A}}$ $\widetilde{\mathfrak{A}}$

EXAMPLES :-

1.—शुक्षाणुटाविटायायमायासारीमाने

Sü-kyang k'ong-la lag-pa ma re'go: And no man laid hands on him.

Sử yang k'o-la lag-pa ma źhyagga (for źhyag-pa) rè' or źhyagma song.

2.—พ.भू.भू.मु.मु.म.स.र.५.मूनुदर्दि।

In the Colloquial this might be:— ਔ-ਪ੍ਰਕੇ-ਸ਼ੁਜ਼ੁਕਾਹੱ-ਨ-ਸੈਨ-ਐੱਗ or:— Yi-shā-yi bu ğyä-po Da-wid j'ungngo: Jesse's son was king David —Jesse begat David the king.

Yi-shāi bu gyā-po Da-wid yin: Jesse's son was King David.

ष्ण-तृष्पेश-मुत्र-चे-दिन्दिश्चेद-शेट-।

Yi-shā-yī gyä-po Ďa-wid kyè'song: Jesse begat King David.

३.—हिंद् के विष्वप्यस्मासेद दें।

K'yō'-ts'ōi nang-na to' mè'-do: Ye have not life in yourselves.

Colloquially :— च्चिन् न्द्राकें दी ब्दाय श्वेंमा सेन्।

K'yö'-rang-ts'öi nang-la to' mè'.

4.—हिंदु गुः शुः मार्शेद दे।

K'yō' kyi bu son-no: Thy son liveth.

Colloquially :— च्चित्रस्तेश्वामार्श्वस्मुपद्गुमा

K'yō' rei bu sön-gyi du'.

5.—८ ना उ भें न शायन हो न से मुन में।

Nga ga-ru yö'-sa la leb mi t'ub-bo: Where I am, ye cannot come. Colloquially :—

ान्यायार्भेर् अत्यार्भेट मुच गुँ अदः

or स्टिनी मुच।

Nga ga-pa yoʻ-sa la yong t'ub-kyi män, or yong mi t'ub.

Yang ngā de t'a-mai nyin par lang-war j'a-o: And I will raise him up at the last day.

Colloquially:— णदःदशःदेःकुःसःमाबुमाःविशासास्पदः गुमार्स्पदः।

Yang ngà đe nyi-ma źhyuģ-shö la yar kya' yong.

7. — दर्गोद सर्वेजा मी चुनाश ति वि य दे ति । मादश सर ति चुर रे ज द वि द यर दि चुर रे । Kön-ch'o' gi t'ū'-t'o-wa de la näpar ğyur-ro: The wrath of God will abide on him.

Colloquially:— नुर्गोन्नसर्केमानी नगदिक्तरहेता (or मिता) ॲट्नी रेर्

Kön-ch'o' gi k'ā-ch'ā' de la (or k'o la) yong-gi-rè'.

श—लट मिट मीश्राट ता निर्मा देशः नश्चेन प्रामुन ने मिल के स्वाप्त का स्वाप Yang k'ong gī nga-la kön-ch'o' la nyèn-kur j'ö shi' chē sung-so: Then said he unto me, worship God.

Colloquially:— रे.दशक्तिरुशाद्यार्थः प्रमानार्याः र्श्वेदायसः वृद्यः प्रमानार्याः स्वयः नुद्राः।

Ďe-nä k'o-rē nga la kön-ch'o' la mō-lam t'ob dag-ga-rang labj'ung.

१.—देवशवस्य सम्तर्वः स्रशःमालकः लेपाः सर्वेदः परः गुरु हो। Ďe nä nam-k''ā na tā žhyān żhyi t'ong-war gyur-to: And there was seen another sign in heaven. Colloquially:

ने निका निमान्य स्थापार कि मान्य Éthyam-pa chi' t'ong j' ung.

N.B.—5 is used only with the Literary Perfect root after final 5, A, 5 (for 55, A5, 5)

The Full stop |, or ||, will henceforth be omitted. See Writing and Punctuation, § 20.

§ 18.—Colloquial Duplications.

Thus, as regards the Infinitive Mood, instead of saying সুনানান্দেনে (Hon.) Dod-pa nang-wa, the Colloquial speaker would say সুনানান্দেনে Dod-da-nang-nga, To proclaim or publish.

Other Examples are :-

মানানা (for মা) মানুমানা (Hon.) SE-LA (for WA) NANG-WA, or NANG-NGA: To absolve.

মুনার্নায়ান্ত্রায়ান্ত্রায়ান্ত্রা (for বা) নার্চা (for বা) মার্কা (Hon.) Kushō kyi sē-la (for wa) Mang-nga (for wa) yin; the master absolved or has absolved.

- স্থাই ইমান্থ্য (for ন) স্ব্দেন্ডির (Vulg.) Tso-wö sä-la (for wa) nang-nga (for wa) yin; The lord absolved or has absolved.
- র্মাম (for মা) প্রামাম (Hon.) Nor-ra (for wa) nang-nga, To err.
- भु नार्वेनश मुंश वेंद्र द (for न) नार्द्र (for न) भेद (Hon.) Kushō kyi nor ra (for wa) nang-nga (for wa) yin : or still better :—
- भु नार्वेन अ गुरा चुना अ देर नार्दा (for न) or मुना अ देर ने देर र (for न) धेर Ku-zhyō-kyi t'u nor nang-nga (for wa), or t'u nor shor-ra (for wa) yin, The master erred, or has erred.
- 디지(국자 (for 디) 회학 (Vulg.) NGA NOR-RA (for WA) YIN:

 I erred, I have erred.
- মূদিদে (for তা) প্রদেশে (Hon.) Pong-nga (for wa) Nang-nga:
 To shun, To renounce.
- নিম্মির্মির্মের (for মা) মার্মেরে (for মা) মৃত্য (Hon.) K'ongśi pong-nga (for wa) nang-nga (for pa) Rè': He shunned, He has shunned.
- 주국자 첫도자'도' (for 되') 국 (Vulg.) K'o-RE PANG-NGA (for PA)
 RE': He shunned, He has shunned.

When the root ends in final A, the Colloquial sometimes resorts to a following A, instead of the Duplication as above. Ex.—

द्रमोत्पन GyE-WA, To stumble.

- ব্লুমান (for ম') মার্মাম (Hon.) ĞYE-RA (for WA) NANG-NGA:
 To stumble.
- দিন্দ্রীমান (for মা) স্বান্দে (for মা) অব (Hon.) K'ong GyeRA (for WA) NANG-NGA (for PA) YIN: He stumbled, He has
 stumbled.

At the same time this were better phrased thus:-

(or ku daś) shor-ra (for wa) rè'. He has stumbled.

다 귀 (for 국') 회학 (Vulg.) NGA GYE-RA (for WA) YIN:
I stumbled, I have stumbled.

As regards verbs the roots of which end in 5, or 5, or 5, or 5, there is no such duplicating custom. They are pronounced in the regular way.

See also \S 15, 8, as to \P was changing into a after a vowel-sound.

\S 19.—The Tone System.

Tone is a very important factor, a fairly correct tone being almost more desirable than absolutely correct grammar; and there exist certain rules on the subject which should be carefully studied.

The MA KA-LI, or Consonantal Series of the MA KA-K'A, is classified by Tibetan Grammarians under six heads, having reference to the respective Genders of the several letters.

These heads are:

- 1. Ži P'o, Masculine.
- 2. ATT MA-NING, Common.
- 3. Fr Mo, Feminine.
- 4. वित्र देश Shin-tu mo, Very Feminine.
- 5. র্ ন্প্র Mo-Sham, Sub-Feminine, or Barren
- 6. ผลัส ผิร Ts'an me', Neuter.

MASCULINE LETTERS.

These are pronounced with a special emphasis, fullness, compactness, and distinctness, arising from a powerful use of the vocal organs. They never undergo any modifications in this respect, even when

guarded by Prefixes or Super-posed Letters, but always preserve intact their own natural sounds.

FEMININE AND VERY FEMININE LETTERS.

In pronouncing these the vocal organs are relaxed, and the phonetic body of the letter is not so much sent forth from the mouth, as suffered to emanate from it gently and gradually. These letters are subject to phonetic modification when guarded. For instance, the addition of Prefixed or Super-posed Letters has the effect of raising the Tonic Pitch, and softening the sound. Thus, $\neg \neg \neg \neg$ Gang, is unguarded, and therefore, to an English ear, sounds very like Kang. But $\neg \neg \neg \neg$ Gang, similarly pronounced like the Ga in Garland, and $\neg \neg \neg$ Gang, similarly pronounced, are guarded, in the first case by a Prefix, and in the second by a Super-posed Letter, and therefore the sound is no longer hard and compact like the k sound of unguarded $\neg \neg$, but softer and exactly like the sound of the English hard g, and the tone is moreover raised, or brought to the Pitch-level of a Masculine Letter.

COMMON LETTERS.

The manner of pronouncing these differs only in degree from the way in which Masculine and Feminine Letters are pronounced. That is, they are uttered less compactly and emphatically than the Masculine, and less softly than the Feminine Letters.

SUB-FEMININE OR BARREN LETTERS.

The pronunciation of these is also only a matter of degree as compared with the pronunciation of Feminine Letters.

NEUTER LETTER.

This has a hard and compact sound.

The following Tabular Statement will elucidate the above remarks:—

| Letter. | | Gender. | Pronunciation. |
|------------|-------|--|--|
| η. | Ka | And the state of t | |
| જ. | Cha | | |
| 5 | Ta } | Masculine | With distinctness, emphasis, fullness |
| ۲۱. | Pa | | and compactness, effected by a special effort of the vocal |
| ર્જ | Tsa | | organs. |
| 口. | K'a | | |
| ع. د | Ch'a | | |
| হা | T'a | | |
| ₹. | P'a } | Common | Not so compactly as the Masculine, |
| <u>ڄ</u> . | Ts'a | | and not so softly as the Femi- nine Letters. |
| 4. | Sha | | |
| ź1. | Sa | | |
| ন্য | Ġa | | |
| E. | Ja | | |
| 5 | Ďа | | |
| מי | B'a | | |
| Ę. | Dz'a | Feminine | A gentle and gradual emanation of the sound, rather than an em- |
| 대. | Wa | | phatic and compact projection of it. |
| ବ୍' | Źhya | | |
| ∄. | Źa | | |
| M. | Ya · | | |

| Letter. | | Gender. | Pronunciation. |
|----------|------|------------------------|--|
| F | Nga | | |
| 3 | Nya | | |
| ሻ | Na | Very Feminine. | More gently and gradually than the Feminine. |
| হা' | Ma | | reminne. |
| χ. | Ra | | |
| Υί. | La } | | |
| 5 | На | Sub-Feminine or Barren | Without effort. |
| ત. | 'A } | | |
| œ. | A | Neuter | Hard, from the base of the throat. |

Even the Five Prefixes possess a gender of their own. Thus:— \exists $\dot{B}a$ is Masculine, having been Feminine, as an Initial.

 $\exists Ga$ are Common, having been Feminine, as Initials.

Q' 'A is Feminine, having been Barren, as an Initial.

N Ma is Very Feminine, unaltered.

So, too, the TEN FINAL AFFIXES have the following genders: -

প্ৰ, Masculine, having been Feminine as an Initial, and Common as a Prefix.

5 Da, Ditto.

Ditto.

J' Éa, Ditto, having been Feminine as an Initial, and Masculine as a Prefix.

Nº Sa, Masculine, having been Common as an Initial.

5 Na, Common, having been Very Feminine as an Initial.

$$\left\{\begin{array}{c} \mathbf{x} \cdot Ra \\ \mathbf{x} \cdot La \end{array}\right\}$$
 Ditto, having been Barren as Initials.

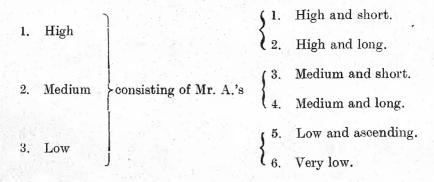
A, Feminine, having been Barren as an Initial, and Feminine as a Prefix.

Thus, the only Letter which undergoes no change in gender, whether as Initial, Prefix, or Final Affix, is \mathbb{N}^* Ma.

In his PRIMER OF STANDARD TIBETAN the Revd. Mr. Edward Amundsen, when dealing with the Tone system, gives prominence to the *Pitch* and *Length*, rather than to the *Compactness*, *Emphasis*, and *Distinctness* of the tone. His classification may be represented thus:—

| ा. ण्ड ५ म ५ | High and short. |
|----------------------------|---|
| 2. ₹ · ¶ · ₹ · | High and long. |
| 3. मि क झ य कं | Medium and short. |
| 4. 5' 3' 3' 31' 21' 5' 54' | Medium and long. |
| 5. मा ह र म हं ल झ द W | { Descending but re-ascending and long. |
| 6. AT | Very low and long. |

We have seen that the Length or Shortness of the Tone is governed by rules of its own (see § 3): hence we need not consider it here in connection with Pitch. So far, therefore, as Pitch alone is concerned, Mr. Amundsen's system may be reduced to only three classifications, namely:—



Now, if, instead of regarding this question of Tone from the point of view of Pitch, we regard it from that of emphasis, fullness, compactness and distinctness, we shall find that the subject again arranges itself under three heads namely, utterances that are very compact and full, those that are only moderately so, and those that are soft and gradual emanations.

To sum up: for all practical purposes it will be found that (1) words beginning with the Masculine Initials \P , \Im , \Im , \Im , \Im , \Im , should be pronounced compactly and fully, and in a high key; (2) words beginning with the Common Initials \P , \Im , \Im , \Im , \Im , \Im , \Im , should be pronounced with moderate emphasis and in a moderately high key; (3) while words beginning with the Feminine Initials Π , Ξ , Π , Π , Π , or with the Very Feminine Initials, Π , Π , Π , Π , or with the Barren Initials Π , Π , Π , or with the Neuter Initial Π , should be pronounced softly and in a low key. It should also be remembered that when an Initial has a Prefix, or a Surmounting Letter, the utterance according to these three rules is somewhat intensified as regards Masculine and Common Initials, and heightened and rendered more compact as regards all the others.

It would appear, however, to be doubtful whether PREFIXES have much to do with the raising of the Tonic Pitch. What is more certain is that they are used (1) for modifying the meaning of a word, e.g., \$\frac{25}{5}\forall^{3}\cdot \text{Ch'\odot'\odot'-PA}\$, To be cut off, To be decided, but \$\frac{25}{5}\forall^{3}\text{Ch'\odot'\odot'-PA}\$

To honour; সুঁር' Dong-wa (for সুር' Dang-wa, Cold), but বিশুনিন Dong-wa, To count, and বিশুনিন Dong-wa, To die; (2) in the formation of the tenses of verbs, as already explained (§ 13); and (3) to effect changes in the pronunciation of Initial Letters. Thus A, as an Initial, is pronounced almost like K in English; but, when prefixed by 5, 5, or 6, it is pronounced like hard 6 in English. Again 5, as an Initial, is pronounced almost like P in English; but when prefixed by 5, it is pronounced as W, when unqualified by any vowel-sound, and as the vowel-sound only, when so qualified; or, if prefixed by 3, it takes the sound of B in English. Again, as regards \mathfrak{J} , see § 13. Again, 5, as an Initial, is pronounced as a dental T; but, if prefixed by \P , \P , or \P , it takes the sound of a dental D. Again, \P and £, when Initials, are pronounced with a slight aspirate; but, when prefixed by ¬, ¬, or ¬, they lose the aspirate. Again ¬, as an Initial, is pronounced almost like S in English; but, when prefixed by T or T, it is pronounced like Z in English. Lastly, G, as an Initial, is pronounced almost like shya; but, prefixed by \P or \P , it takes the sound of zhya.

$\S 20.$ —Writing and Punctuation.

Originally, Tibetan was a monosyllabic language. Nowadays, however, its words are mostly dissyllabic. There is no attempt in the written or printed language to divide off words from one another, either by spacing or by punctuation. Hence, they all succeed and seem to run into each other in one continuous line, and the reader's knowledge is all that enables him to recognize them individually. It is otherwise, however, with syllables. A syllable may consist of a single consonant, simple or complex, or of two or more such consonants, silent or pronounced. But, be its consonantal structure what it may, the whole collocation of letters possesses only one vowel-sound, inherent or expressed by vowel-signs. Every such collocation or syllable must be marked off

Instead of the two plain strokes the following, . Instead of the one plain stroke the following, . In some books the comma is seen thus, &. Sometimes the dot (') or $\widetilde{\mathfrak{A}}$ is seen ', and sometimes even larger, '. In Book-letter and in Running-hand the $\widetilde{\mathfrak{A}}$ is seen thus, \mathfrak{C} .

At the commencement of printed and written matter symbols like the following may often be seen:—

This is called Swasti or the Auspicious Benediction. It may begin any work dealing with Ethics and Morality. The top figures are the Double Flame, or RADIANCE, the next are the Double Gem, and the lowest are the Double Lotus. On the right is, 381.451

TRIPLE DITTO, for writings on Philosophy and Theology.

RADIANCE, GEM, TRIPLE LOTUS, and STALK. Beginning chapters in Religious works.

Lotus and Stalk. Used with official correspondence, proverbs, maxims, etc., to indicate a fresh beginning.

ORDINARY BLOCK PRINT.

The proper method of writing this is first to make the thick horizontal stroke at the top of each letter, and then the rest of the character, working from left to right as in English, and adding the Ya-tas, Ra-tas, and vowel-signs last. The straight vertical strokes should be long, fairly thick at the top, and tapering to the bottom.

In writing \mathfrak{S} , the vertical stroke on the left may first be made downwards, and then the rest, never omitting clearly to define the loop in the centre. Or, a horizontal stroke may first be made, then the vertical stroke on the left downwards, and then the remainder, from the right-hand end of the horizontal stroke. The down-stroke from the loop must be long, quite vertical, and tapering, otherwise the beginner is apt to produce something which might be mistaken for \mathfrak{S} , which has no central loop, and whose final down-stroke is short, and instead of being vertical slopes off to the right.

Other letters which the beginner is apt to mix up with each other when attempting to write them, are Γ Nga, Γ Ta, and Γ Da. The down-strokes in nga and da begin at or near the right end of the horizontal line, and curve well to the left, whereas the down-stroke of Ta begins at the left end of the horizontal line, and comes straight down, or even with a slight slant to the right. The final stroke of nga is short and thick, while those of Ta and Ta are long and tapering. Ta final down-stroke, moreover, takes a bend to the left, while that of Ta bears well to the right. Both, too, are brought well down, whereas Ta final stroke is stunted.

In writing \mathcal{A} the little stroke on the left should first be made, then the thin stroke next to it, then the top horizontal stroke and undercircle, and finally the long vertical down-stroke.

may be written by first making the top horizontal stroke, then the whole left side of the letter, and finally the vertical down-stroke on the right. Or, after the horizontal stroke, first the little curved stroke in the top left-hand corner, then a straight diagonal line from

right to left downwards, and finally the vertical stroke on the right downwards.

In writing letters like 5 and 5, the down-stroke containing the loop is usually commenced from near the right-hand end of the horizontal stroke.

The vertical stroke of 5 should project down slightly beyond the point of junction with the curve on the right.

- First the horizontal, then the thin curving down-stroke, beginning it from the centre of the horizontal, and lastly the thick curving stroke on the right, the top end of which should meet the thin down-stroke a little below the letter's junction with the horizontal. Or thus, \mathcal{E} , that is, first the horizontal stroke, then the short down stroke, and lastly the curving stroke, somewhat after the way we write the figure five.
- First the horizontal, next from the centre of that stroke the down-stroke, then the loop on the left, working upwards, and then by carrying on the pen, the loop on the right working downwards.
- A First make an A That is to say, a vertical down-stroke, then the rest of the figure. Lastly make a straight down-stroke, meeting the end of A, A has no loop.
- First the dot, or thick short stroke on the left at the top, then the half circle to the right, then the thick short stroke slanting from left to right, and finally the long hook. Or else, first a horizontal stroke, then the dot or short thick stroke on the left at the top and then the rest as stated.
- First the horizontal, then from its centre or from near its right-hand end the short thin lines loping downward to the left, then the hook with the tail brought up level with but clear of the horizontal stroke; next, from near the top of the second stroke a straight or curving line downwards with a slant to the right; and lastly the vertical down-stroke.

First a short horizontal, then a sort of v with another horizontal over the right-hand limb, then the stroke slanting to the right, and finally the vertical down-stroke. Or, first two parallel vertical strokes of equal length, with a horizontal on each, then another parallel vertical stroke a little longer than the others. Then join the first two with an under-curved stroke; and lastly, with a slanting stroke from left to right, join the second and third vertical strokes, at the bottom. The first way is the better.

First write an elongated W, thus W, and then add the bar across the middle.

Or first write an ordinary A, and then subjoin a W without its horizontal stroke.—Thus A

First a short horizontal, then the thin short down-stroke, slanting to the left, then the thick stroke up the end of it, slanting to the right. Then, from near the top of the second stroke, make the long down-stroke, sloping to the right, and lastly the vertical down-stroke.

First a horizontal, then the short thin down-stroke from near the right-hand end of the horizontal, and slanting to the left, then the thick stroke at the bottom, beginning it from well to the left of the down-stroke and carrying it boldly across the end of the latter, with a good sweep to the right and with a downward trend.

In making \mathfrak{A} the beginner should see that he does not make it look like \mathfrak{A} .

Then from near the left-hand end a thin downward stroke slanting to the left, then a thick downward-stroke slanting to the right, and finally the vertical down-stroke, commencing it from the right-hand end of the horizontal.

There is a fairly long horizontal. Then to the first half of it

計量

subjoin a small 47 without its horizontal. Then, from the right-hand end of the horizontal, make the long vertical down-stroke.

ন This is the same as ন reversed.

Π First the horizontal. Then the two little strokes, and finally the long vertical down-stroke.

BOOK-LETTER and RUNNING-HAND.

These are very much alike, the Running Hand, however, being the more difficult of the two to read and write. Specimens of both, in all possible combinations, are given in Csoma de Körös's Grammar (1834).

§ 21.—Spelling.

Tibetan spelling may be described as a cumulative process, one only of the component parts of a syllable being taken up at a time. Next, the sound so taken up is repeated, but with the addition in advance, or by way of assumption, of the second component part. Then this second component part is pronounced by itself. Finally, the phonetic effect of all that has thus been taken up is pronounced together, and that effect represents the literal expression of the syllable.

A knowledge of how to spell is most useful, and it is quite worth the student's while to take the trouble to acquire it.

The following examples are intended to exhibit the process progressively, through most of the stages from simple to complex syllables:—

I.—Simple Consonants.

 η (for example), and one final affix.

गाना Ka, Kag-ga, Ka'.

ης Ka, Kang-nga, Kang.

ης Κα, Κä'-da, *Κα*'.

ης Ka, Kän-na, Kän.

ης Ka, Kä-la, Kä.

可利 Ka, Kä-sa, Kä.

II.—Consonant and Double Affix.

নামে Ga, Gang-nga-sa, Gang.

দক্ষণ K'a, K'am-ma-sa, K'am.

ন্ত্ৰ K'a, K'am-ma (Lä'-kor)-sa, K'am.

III.—Consonant with Prefix and Affix.

5ጣዊ Ďa-wo: Ka, K'ā-'ā, K'ā.

স্পত্ত Ma-wo: K'a, K''ā-'a, K''ā.

IV .- Consonant and Single Vowel-sign.

Ka, ģi-ģu, Ki.

η Ka, źhyab-kyu, Ku.

 $\widehat{\eta}$ Ka, deng-bu, Ke.

Ka, na-ro, Ko.

V.—Consonant with double Vowel-sign and Subjunct.

স্ত্রী Ga, na-ro, go; 'ā, na-ro, oû; Goû.

VI.—Consonant with Vowel-sign and Affix.

Τς Ka, na-ro, ko; kong, nga, Kong.

\$5' Ra, deng-bu, re; rè'-da, Rè'.

VII.—Consonant with Vowel-sign and Double Affix.

সিউন্থি K'a, na-ro, K'o; k'om, ma, sa, K'om.

VIII.—Reversed Letters.

Ta-log-Ta; Tam-ma (Lä'-kor) Tam; k'a; Tam-k'a.

ፖርቲያ Da-log-Da; ma; Ra, zhyab-kyu, Ru; Da-ma-ru.

IX.—Ya-tās.

Л' Ka, Ya-tā, Kya.

۲۳ Pa, Ya-tā, Cha.

Z' P'a, Ya-tā, Ch'a.

5 Ba, Ya-tā, J'a.

Ŋ Ma, Ya-tā, Nya.

X.—Ya-tā with Vowel-sign.

📆 Ka, ya-tā, kya; kya, ģi-ģu, kyi.

XI.—Ya-tā with Vowel-sign and Affix.

፲፮ኛ Ka, ya-tā, kya; kya, ģi-ģu, kyi; kyī, sa, kyi.

XII.—Ya-tā with Vowel-sign and Double Affix.

ট্রমে K'a, ya-tā, k'ya; k'ya, deng-bu, k'ye; k'yeb, ba, sa, k'yeb.

XIII.—Ya-tā with Prefix and Affix.

ዃ፬ኛ Ďa-wo: ka, ya-tā, kya; kyar, ra, kyar.

5ម្នា Ďa-wo: pa, ya-tā, cha; chä, la, chä.

XIV .- Ya-tā with Prefix, Vowel and Affix.

รีปุ๊จ" Da-wo: ka, ya-tā, kya; kya, ģi-gu, kyi; kyī-la, kyī.

555. Da-wo: pa, ya-tā, cha; cha, na-ro, cho; chö', da, chō'.

XV .- Ya-tā with Prefix, Vowel and Double Affix.

বিশ্বাম Ba-wo: ka, ya-tā, kva; kya, ģi-ģu, kyi; kyi, ga-sa, kyī.

XVI.—Ya-tā and Affix, each with Vowel-sign.

B3. K'a, ya-tā, k'ya; k'ya, deng-bu, k'ye; 'ā, źhyabkyu, 'u; k'ye-'u.

XVII.—Ra-tās and Ha-tās.

Spelt like ya-tas, but the following would be new:-

Ba, bān, na, bān; ɗa, ha-tā, d'ā; d'ā, źhyab-kyu, d'ū; ka; Bān-d'ū-kā.

Ba, ha-tā, b'ā; b'ā, ra-tā, br'ā; br'ā, źhyab-k**y**u, br'ū; br'um, ma, br'ūm; ha, ra-tā, hra; hra, ģi-ģu, hri; Br'ūm-hri.

XVIII.-La-tās.

刑 Ka, 刑 Ġa, 記 Ba, la-tā, La. 話 Ra, N Sa, 記 Źa, la-tā, Da.

লুঁনা Ka, la-tā, la ; la, na-ro, lo ; loģ-ģa, Lo'.

XIX .- Wa-żurs.

太月刊 Ts'a, wa-źur, ts'ā; k'a, źhyab-kyu, k'u; k'uģ, ģa, k'u': Ts'ā-k'u'.

পুর্টি Źhya, wa-źur, źhyā; ma, na-ro, mo; źhya-mo.

T 5 N5 Ba, na-ro, bo; da, ha-tā, d'ā; d'ā, ģi-ģu, d'ī; sa; ta, wa-źur, tâ: Bo-dī-sa-tâ.

XX. Ra-gos, La-gos, and Sa-gos.

Τη Ra, ka-tā, Ka.

和 Ra, ģa-tā, Ğ'a.

Ra, nga-tā, *Nga*.

H La, ka-tā, Ka.

H La, ga-tā, Ğa.

및 La, nga-tā, Nga.

N Sa, ka-tā, Ka.

Na, ga-tā, Ğa.

🔊 Sa, nga-tā, Nga.

In spelling, the Prefix is taken first, then the surmounting letter, then the ya- $t\bar{a}$, or ra- $t\bar{a}$, or other subjunct, then the vowel, then the affix or affixes. Thus:—

সমুদ্ধ Ba-wo: Sa, ga-tā, ga; ga, ra-tā, da; da, źhyab-kyu, du; dung, nga, sa, Dung.

XXI. Miscellaneous Examples.

Pa, pāṇ, ṇa, pāṇ; ch'a, deng-bu, ch'e; ch'én; na, ch'èn; ra, ģi-ģu, ri; rin, na, rin; pa na-ro, po; ch'a, deng-bu, ch'e: Pāṇ-ch'én, RIN-PO-CH'E, The Grand Lama of Tashī L'ümpo in Tsang, usually called the Tashī Lama, and an incarnation of 'Ö'-paġ-mè'.

'A, na-ro, 'o; 'ö', ɗa, 'ö'; ɗa-wo; pa, pag, ga, pag; ma, deng-bu, me; mè', ɗa, mè': 'Ö'-PAG-MÈ', Buddha Amitabha, or Boundless Light.

Ta; La; 'ā, ģi-gu, 'ī; laī; Ba, la-tā, la; ma:

TA-LAI LA-MA, The Dalai Lama, or Spiritual

Head of Tibet until Sir Frank Younghusband's
entry into Lhassa.

ব্রবাহ্ন 'A-wo; ba, ra-tā, da; dā, sa, dā; la, ja-tā, ja;

ja, na-ro, jo; jong, nga, sa, jong: Ďä-jong (pronounced Ďän-jong), Sikkim.

Ra, da-tā, da; da, na-ro, do; ra, ja-tā, Ja; Ja-dengbu, Je; ga, la-tā, la; la, ģi-gu, li; ling, nga, ling: Do-JE-LING, or Dor-JE-LING, Darjeeling, or the Place of Ecclesiastical Sway; literally the Place of the Sovereign Stone.

河方科方 Ba, na-ro, bo; bö', ɗa, bö'; sa, ka-tā, ka; Kä', ɗa, Kä': Bö'-кä', Language of Tibet.

§ 22.—Transliteration.

For the system adopted in this work of transliterating Tibetan words into Romanized Equivalents see § 2.

The best method, no doubt, is the one that was adopted at the Vienna Congress of Orientalists, and which may be found exemplified in Rai Sarat Chandra Das Bahadur's TIBETAN-ENGLISH DICTIONARY. By that system each letter in a Tibetan word is transliterated, but a line is drawn under every letter that is not pronounced, or it is distinguished by special type from the letters that are pronounced. It is not adopted in this work, as it is really only necessary for purposes of scientific precision.

§ 23.—Use of the Tibetan Dictionary.

The following appears to be the way in which the words in a Tibetan Dictionary (ইপ্নেইড T'sɪd-চ্ছত') are arranged.

1.—According to the order of the TR KA-LI, or Consonantal Series of the TR KA-K'A, regarded as *Initials*, or as they are sometimes called, *Root letters*, with the inherent vowel-sound of UN A. The first thing, therefore, that the student has to do, when he wants to look up a word, is to ascertain what its Initial letter is.

Then the words under each consonant, beginning for instance with π Ka, are arranged thus:—

- 2.—The simple consonant, e.g. 7
- 3.—The simple consonant with subjuncts like ス''ā, wa-zur, or Pr' Sha-log-K'a—e.g. 渓 ス' Lā-wā, Woollen Blanket.
- 4.—The simple consonant with affixes, single and double, for the order of which as amongst themselves, see § 16.

Then the same with subjuncts.

- 5.—Next, according to the foregoing order as regards their consonants, words qualified by the vowel-signs gi-gu, 2hyab-kyu, peng-bu, and Na-ro, in that order.
- 6.—Simple consonant qualified by ya-tā alone.
- 7.—Ya-tā words in all orders down to 5, inclusive.
- 8.—Simple consonant qualified by Ra-tā alone.
- 9.—Ra-tā words in all orders down to 5, inclusive.
- 10.—Simple consonant qualified by 5 Ha-tā alone.
- 11.—Ha-tā words in all orders down to 5, inclusive.
- 12.—Simple consonant qualified by la-tā alone.
- 13.—La-tā words in all orders down to 5, inclusive.
- 14.—Foreign or other special words formed with the Reversed letters.
- 15.—Words with the Prefixes \(\mathbb{T}\), \(\mathbb{T}\), \(\mathbb{T}\), and \(\mathbb{C}\), in that sequence, and each sequence arranged according to the foregoing orders.
- 16.—Consonant qualified by Ra-go.
- 17.—Ra-go words according to foregoing orders.
- 18.—Consonant qualified by La-go.
- 19.—La-go words according to foregoing orders.
- 20.—Consonant qualified by Sa-go.
- 21.—Sa-go words according to foregoing orders.
- 22.—No words with α La, as an Initial, and having any Superposed letter like γ or γ , need be looked for under α La. They will only be found under the head of the Superposed letter.

Words in \mathcal{A} La, however, are found with qualifying vowel-signs, and such words may be looked for under \mathcal{A} La.

N.B.—Csoma de Körös's Dictionary is differently arranged.

 $\S~24.$ —Indicative and Differentiating Particles.

Together, The very, Just, Exactly, etc. Ex.:— 5切ち河 The Spring;

5万河 The Summer; 天ち河 The Autumn; 5切ち河 The Winter.

Sometimes, in this connection, 日 is seen instead of 河 [

নাইমানা Both, The two together; নামুমানা All three, The three together. In this connection 3 sometimes replaces শা।

रिण The very, That very; रिणाञ्चर Just so; रिणाॲर (as a reply) Yes, exactly, precisely, to be sure.

Sometimes its sole use is to differentiate between words that resemble each other, e.g. $\neg \neg \neg \neg$ Confidence; but $\neg \neg \neg \neg \neg$ Hood of a snake; $\neg \neg \neg \neg$ To show, To teach; but $\neg \neg \neg \neg$ Autumn. $\neg \neg \neg$, when used, is generally found attached to words ending in $\neg \neg \neg$, $\neg \neg \neg$, $\neg \neg \neg$ and also in $\neg \neg \neg$ and in vowels.

 \mathbb{R}^{\bullet} $K^{\bullet}a$. When this particle is used, it is generally found attached to Literary words ending in \mathbb{R}^{\bullet} , \mathbb{R}^{\bullet} , and \mathbb{R}^{\bullet} , and to Colloquial words ending in \mathbb{R}^{\bullet} , or \mathbb{R}^{\bullet}

Ex.: - 독자 (properly 독자기) Appetite; 키드라기 (properly 키드라기) Number, Enumeration.

Also sometimes used instead of η as above explained.

A also indicates the top, upper surface, or front of anything

- inanimate. Ex.:— A or AAAA Lid; AAAA Ridge, or Summit of a hill; AAA Top, or head of a mountain, or pass; AAAA Head of cliff.
- 지 Ga. Used after vowels, or after 도', 자', 유', and 유' It is used as a Differentiating Particle with many roots. Ex.:—씨자자 To disappear; but 씨자지 Branch; 뭐도 Plain or Steppe; but 뭐드지 Painted Scroll; 頁 Husband; but 頁 제 A man, as distinguished from an effeminate person.
- ঠ Ch'a. Apart from its meanings as a word by itself, this Particle is often seen added to roots. Ex.:— ব্ৰন্ধ (Literary), or নাঠ (Colloquial), Echo; শ্বনিক Conversation; শ্বনিক Negotiations.
- 지 Pa. Used after 지, 기, 기, 지, 지, 지 expresses ownership, or possession, or the connection subsisting between a person and some thing, action, employment, place, etc. Ex.:— [한다 A house, but [한다] A married man, or householder; 등 A horse, but 등 지 Horseman; 등 Water, but 등 지 Water-carrier; 자기가 Arrow, but 자기가 A title of Cupid as holder of five arrows; 제가 The Tibetan Alphabet, hut 제가가 A child learning its letters; 당자 Lhassa, but 얼마지 An inhabitant of Lhassa.
 - 2.—When added to all Cardinal Numbers except স্টিন্ One, it forms the Ordinal Numbers. Thus, স্ট্রা Two, but স্ট্রামা
 - 3.—It is used also in connection with other enumerational expressions. Ex.:— বুলান্তাম the শ্রী or consonantal series of 30

- letters; মুন্দ্রস্থান A two-year-old boy; মুন্দ্রম Measuring a cubit.
- 4.—It is the sign of the Infinitive Mood, the Verbal Substantive, and the Participle. Ex.:— ক্লুনামা (Lit.) and ক্রমামন্ত্রা (Coll.) To preach. The or A preaching, Preaching, Preached. নির্দ্রা নামকর্মামন্ত্রামন

The last example shows that \mathfrak{A}' , added to a root, and helped out by the auxiliary $\mathfrak{A}'\mathfrak{A}'$ To be, goes to form the Perfect Indicative Tense.

- 5. 二切 is also used to distinguish the different meanings of homonymous roots. Ex.:— 南口 Marrow, but 南口口 Foot.
- Fo. Indicates an agent. It is then sometimes, e.g. when annexed to the Infinitive, preceded by I' pa. Thus, I'I' A or the hearer.

It also expresses the idea of the Definite or Indefinite Article

in connection with Noun Substantives. Ex. 회지한 An or the eye; 빗지한 A or the country; 회학한 A or the tree, or piece of wood: 의리한 A or the road; 회학한 The poor.

Used with numerals it also performs the functions of the Definite Article, or of the word aforesaid. Ex.:— 되었다. The three together.

- P'o. An affixed or prefixed particle, signifying Male, or paternal.

 Ex.:— 5 전 Cock-bird; 연전 Male fox; 전투자자 Bull Yak; 전통 Dog.
- 지 Wa. The form assumed by 지 when the root to which it is annexed ends in a vowel, or in 도', 지, 도' or 국' In many noun-substantives, however, its place is taken by 지'. Ex.:— 역자기 An oriental; 원도기 Valley; 빛과기 A provincial or rustic; 원덕지기 A frontiers-man.
- Bo, or Wo. The form assumed by ই when the root to which it is annexed ends in a vowel, or in চ', ম', চ' or ম' Ex.:—কু'ম' A river; মন্থি or নিমিল ; ব্যম্ভি সি Brave.
- Ma. An immovable particle after various roots of substantives. Ex.:— うい Sun; 高い Monk; 河が Milk. Sometimes, though not always, it indicates the Feminine Gender. Ex.:— 南方で A mare.
- 新 Mo. Affixed or prefixed to noun roots, it generally indicates the Feminine Gender. Ex.:— 資新 or 新寛 Bitch. But not always. Ex.:— 天中新 Music; 表 和 Top-point.

Attached to adjectives, it does not always indicate gender. Ex. ক্রিল Great; মিন্মান Good, fine.

- \mathfrak{F} Tsa. A differentiating particle. Ex. $\mathfrak{I}^{m}\mathfrak{F}$ A steep declivity, but $\mathfrak{I}^{m}\mathfrak{F}$ A staircase.
- 表 Tse. A point, top, or edge. Also, however, an affix of Chinese origin. Ex.:— 「可可養 Polish, lustre, brilliant to a point or degree; dazzling; 以表 A duck; 五元 A brass coin; 可定義 Tibetan name of Confucius.
- \mathfrak{F} Ni. See § 27, 2, on the Definite Article.

「Nga. Indicate the Definite or Indefinite Article, but are not much met with. Ex.:— 新て The or an egg; 和に可 The or a lion; うに The deep.

P. K'u

믜 Gu.

5 Ngu.

δ Nu.

 \mathfrak{Z}^{\bullet} Bu, Wu.

5 Ru.

a. Lu.

3. 'u

 \mathbf{W}^{\bullet} Yu.

Definite or indefinite and diminutive particles. Apparently a re-duplication in (źhyab-kyu) of the final letter of the root. Ex.:— 表写了 A or the mite; 其可可 (莫可) A or the child; 可可 A or the youth. But not always. Ex.:— 司 3 A or the mannikin; 氧甲氧氯 A or the little drop.

§ 25.—The Cases and their Signs.

(N.B.—The student is advised to glance at the paragraphs and conjugations relating to the verb To Be. See post.)

The various relations in which a Tibetan Noun and Pronoun may stand to some other word in the sentence are nearly all expressed by means of divers monosyllabic primitive particles, and words compounded therewith, which perform the same functions as are performed by English Prepositions, but which, save for sundry Vocative Signs, are all Postpositional. These relations or cases are as follow:—

I.—THE NOMINATIVE CASE.

Except in connection with Intransitive Verbs (Active; Neuter or Inactive; and Inceptive, i.e., implying a beginning or change of state), and also with the verbs $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{2}^{\bullet} \widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{1}^{\bullet} T_{0}$ be (the mere copula which is used attributively); $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{2}^{\bullet} \widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{1}^{\bullet} T_{0}^{\bullet}$ or $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{2}^{\bullet} \widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{1}^{\bullet}$ its negative form; $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{2}^{\bullet} \widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{1}^{\bullet} T_{0}^{\bullet}$ be, to exist, to be present; $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{2}^{\bullet} \widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{1}^{\bullet}$ its negative form; $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{2}^{\bullet} \widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{1}^{\bullet}$ its emphatic or intensive form (hardly ever used), and one or two other forms of the verb T_{0} be used in Literary Tibetan; there is practically no such thing in Tibetan as a verb governed by the Nominative Case. The following is an instance in which, though the practice is irregular, it is allowable and common in the Colloquial to use the Nominative in the usual European way:—

हिंद्र-मदाम्बद्धाः ऑदादशा

Will you drink tea?

The more correct way would be:—

(or E'A श्रुट मी भेद सका

or A श्रुट मी भेद सका)

Honorifically :— দ্রি**দ**্যীশ্বংশার্কাম হ'নঞ্জিম স্মিন্দের or শার্ম স্মিন্দির বি

The subject, however, is always put in the Nominative Case in sentences like the following, where, though the verb is Transitive, it is also Passive:—

도 (의) 축도계 অ도 lam being beaten. 당표 (의) 물짜타 한국 기 The girl is loved. In such cases A' la is optional, and may be omitted if desired.

The subject is always put in the Nominative Case in sentences like the following, where the verbs are Intransitive (active, neuter, or inceptive):—

दृर्वे कुमामी प्रमा द्राम्य प्रस्ति प्रमा कर या प्रस्ति प्रमा के साम क्ष्मी प्रमा सुमा क्ष्म स्रिन् मा सुमा क्षम स्रिन् मा

The horses run.

I am going down to the bazaar.

It is raining.

The sun shines.

The child sleeps.

The child wakes, or breaks from slumber.

Where, however, the verb is transitive, the Nominative Case is never used, but always the Agentive Case. See § 25, VI.

II.—THE VOCATIVE CASE.

There is practically no Vocative Case, but several polite expressions are often used by way of assent, dissent, or address. The commonest is $\mathbb{C}^{|A|}$ LA, and its variants.

III.—THE OBJECTIVE OR ACCUSATIVE CASE.

This is the same as the Nominative, with or without A. LA, signifying As regards. Ex.:—

নিম্ন্রমি (মা) ব্রমম্মিরির্নীরের্না। He loves the girl. Literally, By him, as regards the girl, a loving is.

ਉਨ੍ਹਾਉਲਾਵਾ (वा) सहेर्य छेर।

Do not forget me.

IV.—GENITIVE CASE.

The signs are:

নি GI, used after words ending with না, or C

可 KYI, used after words ending with 万, 刀, or 叭, or in the Colloquial after 名う Ďi, This.

N.B. $\widehat{\mathbb{H}}$, $\widehat{\mathbb{H}}$, and $\widehat{\mathbb{H}}$ may all alike be pronounced $\widehat{\mathbb{H}}$ in conversation.

1.—Possessive Aspect.

When the word to which the sign is annexed is in that part of the sentence which contains the subject, it should precede the chief substantive of the subject. Ex.:—

स्यत्रेट्या। नास्यानात्यः (०० सुन्त्रास्यस्यस्य स्त्रिन्। नास्यानात्यः (०० सुन्त्रास्यस्य स्त्रिन्। न्यस्य स्वर्तास्य स्त्रिन्।

The fame of Lhassa is great.

The gracious wisdom of the Almighty is everywhere pervading.

2.—Qualificative Aspect.

When the word to which the sign is annexed is indicative of some quality, it may be regarded as an adjective; but, unlike Tibetan adjectives in general, it should *precede* whatever it qualifies. Ex.:—

स्रायहियास्त्रेत्रेत्त्रेत्तिः स्ति

Lhassa is the city of the Jölmo (a sweet-singing bird).

र्बेन भार्ने ने पुत्र के मुझरायदे (or मुझरा वर्दे) पुत्र केमा रेन्।

Tibet was formerly a hidden (or secret) land.

N.B.—The particle \hat{S} NI (see § 27, 2) has the effect of singling out and laying stress on the word \hat{S} 5. WAY BÖ'-YÜ, Tibet. This

English word Tibet seems to have originated from some phrase such as ৪ই নিই DI-BÖD, whence Ti-bōt=Tibet; for, to a European (i.e., Continental, e.g. German) ear the sound of 5 is very like t.

As to the adjectival use of the Genitive case-sign, see also § 30, I, (vi).

3.—Purposive Aspect.

इन्में समा

Formedicine the box, medicine box.

better still, simply স্মন্

इस्माना मिना अ or मुन्मना or, For tobacco a bay—A tobacco pouch.

र्ट्याम्या।

Money-bag.

इस्रापना।

A leather bag for dry barley flour.

V.—THE DATIVE CASE.

1.—The only genuine Dative sign is A' LA, which should be used in this sense after verbs of giving, shewing, speaking or telling, and teaching, and some others.

Ex.:-

द्यापिर पार्ये करे हेर में प्रेम

I will give you the book.

दर्वे केनस द्वेंब मुक्ष मि ता त्यस गा नस्त

My syce showed him the way.

यारेर or वस्त्रार्केट or पर्मा

श्रायाः वृद्यायन ५८।

Tell the man to come.

मिट मीश मि के या मिरिये केश मिश्रश नश्चन:लूट.।

He will teach them his (religious) law.

निर्ने ग्रीस मार्थिमा ये त्या सार में त्या पर or ইমম (for ব') প্রবাম |

Did you tell the servant not to go? 5.5 (A) , A(A)

2.—When the verb To be is used impersonally; for instance, in sentences intended to be the equivalent of English sentences beginning with the phrases, There is, There was, There has been, Tibetan requires that the word to which A LA, when used, is annexed, should precede the chief substantive of the subject. With regard to the idiom for expressing the verb To have, Tibetans use the verb A Yö'-PA, To be present, To exist, in connection with the Dative in A LA, after the manner of the Russians when the latter, instead of saying YA IMEYU, I have, say U MENYA YEST, To me is, or To me there is. Ex:—

रे हे नेवे खेट या मादश व्ये ।

There is snow on that hill-top.

If the speaker has some uncertainty regarding the fact to which he is speaking, he will use the verb 357 instead of 57. Thus:—

रे हे देवे हेट य महस्य दुना।

There is (I am almost sure) snow on that hill-top.

If he is not at all sure, but is only hazarding the statement, he will use the phrase \widetilde{W}_{7} ' \widetilde{X}_{7} ' YÖ-PA-RÈ', pronounced YAW-A-RÈ', instead of either \widetilde{W}_{7} ' or 957, or he may even use \widetilde{W}_{7} ' Yong. Thus:—

रै:क्वें'रेवे:ब्वेंट'व्यम्बद्धाः व्यन्तेनुः (or व्यन्तः)। There is (I understand) snow on that hill-top.

When There is, There was, etc., is used indefinitely, $\widetilde{\mathsf{WL}}^*$ Yong, Will be, takes the place of the above, much as the future is employed by a Highlander in Scotland to express the present tense. Thus:—

अट्यांभेटा। अट्यांभेटा।

There are (I expect), or There will be, very many trees in that valley down there.

3.—The following examples also illustrate the verb To have :—
মান্দ্ৰীন্দ্ৰামান্দ্ৰী This man has parents.

মন্মানিমানামান (মৃত্ is not No, he has no parents. used now.)

यनाशाम्यायायायायाः

Yes, he has parents (emphatic).

4.—The Dative instead of the direct construction may also be used thus:—

দেব । ন্ব মান্ত্র নির্দ্তি নির্দ্তি কাল্য নার স্থানির নির্দ্তির নির্দ্ধির নির্দ্তির নির্দ্ধির নির্দ্তির নির্দ্ধির নির্দ্তির নির্দ্তির নির্দ্তির নির্দ্ধির নির্দ্তির নির্দ্তির নির্দ্ধির নির্দ্ধির

I suppose your mother is aged.

Literally, To my mind your mother seems aged.

The Honorific form of this would be :-

द्वे शेशकाया मिन् ग्री खुका ह्मु महिंगाका नमें दिवे स्वार्थित ग्री खुका हमु महिंगाका

ম', La, is used to express for in sentences like the following :—
5'বেই মুব্ৰামান্ত্ৰিমান্ত্ৰমান্ত্ৰিমান্ত্ৰিমান্ত্ৰিমান্ত্ৰিমান্ত্ৰিমান্ত্ৰিমান্ত্ৰিমান্ত্ৰমান্ত্ৰিমান্ত্ৰেমান্ত্ৰেমান্ত্ৰেমান্ত্ৰেমান্ত্ৰেমান্ত্ৰেমান্ত্ৰেমান্ত্ৰেমান্ত্ৰেমান্ত্ৰেমান্ত্ৰেমান্ত্ৰেমান্ত্ৰেমান্ত্ৰেমান্ত্ৰেম

ABOUT, or CONCERNING, is also expressed by Q' LA. Thus:-

यश्रामुहार (म) देन वा श्रीता

I was or have been troubled about many affairs.

VI.—THE AGENTIVE CASE.

This case, which expresses the idea of anything being done by a person or thing, should always be used instead of the Nominative case with Transitive Verbs. The case-signs are as follow, and are annexed to the subject, that is to say, to the noun-substantive, the adjective if any, the definite or indefinite article, if any, or to the phrase constituting the subject.

SA, usable after vowels, or after a consonant sounding in inherent "" a. This "si silent, but modifies the immediately preceding vowel-sound. See § 3.

 (N.B.— দীম', দুম', and দুম' may all be pronounced দীম' ši.)
ম্ম' দা

way Yi

way all be pronounced দীম' ši.)

used after words ending with vowels.

way Yi

used in versification after vowels.

EXAMPLES :-

ह्म संर्केश अदार् दाया मिल्रा हार मिल्रा Lamas often drink tea.

हिंद्र गुरुष्ट त्या क्षेत्र हो न्य क्षेत्र क्षेत्र क्षेत्र क्षेत्र हो न्य क्षेत्

दे दशकी भुगिया रिश (or निर्धित के कि निर्धित कि निर्धित के कि निर्धित कि निर्धित के कि निर्धित क

ने निकायम् केन ने सामु सित्या सामित्र सामित सामित्र सामित साम

्वैश्चर्युटः। १,८५२,स्राम्बेश्वरास्थ्रस्थित्यः If you had told me the truth I would have forgiven you.

I cannot give him the work.

She will not eat her food.

Then a serving layman will bring food. (Amundsen).

Then the messenger pours out the wooing-beer for both the parents of the girl.

(Amundsen).

The two parents of the boy thus consulted (conversed).

(Amundsen).

दर्मी स्राप्तः

Do-K'an, The goer, He who goes.

लूट श्राप्तव

Yong-K'an, The comer, He who comes.

पर्ये.शामन

DI-K'AN, The writer, He who writes.

It is found thus in the Literary Tibetan into which the New Testament has been translated:—

বৃদ্ধার্থ প্রমান্থ ত্ব নাশ্ব মানব বী বৃশ্বি । মার্ক্রিলা মেলাকা হিছে।

He who built all things is God (Heb. iii. 4).

श्रुशःणुदः स्टः य5दः श्रामदः सुः नामशः सः २र्देरः यः रे दे यरेदः यः स्थिदः सुः नामशः सः

But he that seeketh the glory of him that sent him, the same is true (John vii. 18).

It is also used adjectively, thus:-

श्रमान्त्राम्यस्य मी से।

The man who steals sheep.

The way in which it is used with the different tenses will be found explained in the paragraphs on The Pronoun (§ 31, IX, A), and The Verb (§ 38, V., D.), and in the Appendix of Conjugations.

VII.—THE LOCATIVE CASE.

This case expresses relations of Space, but implies also the idea of Rest.

The common case-signs are the following primitive particles:—

$$\left\{\begin{array}{c} \mathbf{A}^{\bullet} \ \mathbf{L}\mathbf{A} \\ \mathbf{5}^{\bullet} \ \mathbf{N}\mathbf{A} \end{array}\right\} : In, On, At, By, \text{ etc.}$$

Also বন্ত্র্বৃত্ত্র Gyt'-nম: Through.

Sometimes the more Literary particles 5, Tv, 5, Ďv, 5 Rv, 5 Rv, 5 Rv, Sv, are also met with.

EXAMPLES:-

मिक्स्यरायार्थ्रणीयरुम।

He lives in Lhassa proper.

८इ। ब्राह्म स्थान प्राप्त सम्भान समित । I saw the Sha-pe on the road.

न्र्रःसर्यामश्रदःर्मश्रम्बदः।

Please speak in Tibetan.

टशाम् प्रि. श्रुपः श्रुपः (for स.र.)

I saw him sitting next his brother.

नर्द्र-सःअर्वेट-वृदः।

सर्देर् हेबर्ने श्वा हिते. विट श्रेंट मी द्रमूस अदर्गामा

Does the chhörten remain by the shepherd's tree?

A - ביקיות ביבימישבין

He will be at his own house.

दशः दे 'त्रां क्षुं अ'या (or व) न्यामाश्चर प्योव।

I have read it in a history-book.

मू पु.स.भश.मू पु.सूर.ताजाघायश्चेण.

His mother kissed him on the forehead.

The following Colloquial examples illustrate the use of compound postpositions as expressive of the same Locative idea:—

मिल्ना म्यून द्वी जूनाश ता मुना मी रेन मश

Will the servant wait outside?

or झुगाओंट टम।

दर्भ र्श्वेष त्यासाय विवास रेवासा वादा ।

Please do not stand in front of me.

त्रं लिण प्रवंश हूँ दश गुै. सर सुँ वशका

Tibet is beyond Sikhim.

95्मा

म्री.यर.प्र.परेचा। पर्यशःक्रिंटशःयप्र.लीपः रट.पर्येचा.लीपः Sikhim is between Nipāl and Butān.

प्रदार्श्वर भ्रम्म अपन्रिया।

The house is near the river.

इ.इ.क्ट्रपु. ब्रेट.ज. (or ब्रेट.टे. or

It is snowing on the hill-tops.

रद्धाः मुलायदे बदाया द नुवा।

The money is inside the leather bag.

म्नट्गा समाप्तित रणीयायः (or बटावः) **५**५मा

The wolf is in the midst of the flock of sheep.

मुॅट हिर रे नार्ड टेंग् केंद्र से लिमा मी साथा क्यांश (or मानुशः) तुन्म।

The city stands beside a big river.

चिम्रक्षामदाने व्यापास्कृता है या लिमा मी समा केर्यायद्गा।

The court of justice is near a pretty garden.

सुमाने देने देने काट यह देना लाय स्वाप्त म्नात्म मियाग्री पर्या।

The child creeps under the pony's legs.

It will be seen that the above Locative postpositions are used with the Genitive Case, that is, they are connected by means of the Genitive sign with the substantive or other part of speech to which they refer.

Notice, however, the following constructions:-

. मि.म्**रा.**च.मू. पिट. टा.सूर. र. म्या. ४४. म्ब्रमारेर दम्मिन दर्म।

The dog chases the hen round the house.

प्रता (or र्रे.त्र.) गा.च.चारुश.गी.चर. वकुर वश्र वर्गे दर्गेश के रेरा दे के दे चना दे दे दि गुला व कु द दश अस

The load must pass through between the two posts.

चर्ड्स.तर्ने.बट.ज.चर्चेचोस.स्ट.।

The train, passing through the midst of the rocky hill, inside the constructed path, ran = The train ran through the rock by the tunnel.

VIII.—THE PERIODAL OR DURATIONAL CASE.

This case expresses relations of Time. Its common signs are the same primitive particles as those which denote the Locative Case, namely:-

 $\left. egin{array}{ll} \P^* & {
m NA} \\ \Pi^* & {
m LA} \end{array}
ight. \left. \left. egin{array}{ll} At, \ In, \ During, \ {
m etc.} \end{array}
ight.$

There are also others, like 5 Ru, 5 Ra, 5 Du, 55 Du

Sometimes the sign is used alone, and sometimes it forms part of compound postpositions, or even of precedent adverbial expressions.

EXAMPLES :-

मिनि दे ते है भुदे नुसाय मुन्तर य

ल्ला । इस.प्रिट्र था स्मयः माशुक्षः मी क्षारा था स्मूर

महिनानीश्रायः यन्त्राशः यन्त्राशः महिनानीशः यन्त्राशः यन्त्राशः यन्त्राशः यन्त्राशः यन्त्राशः यन्त्राशः यन्त्र

(or अक्षेत्रल) लाय-श्राट ।

मुैर्ल्र। इर-एशक्षरशःमुशःगुैः द्वेशःश्वम्।शःवेशः

र्केन्याम्बर्गीत्राम् यक्टेन्विकामीत्राम्

्रह्माम्बरमात्मामा हे हे हो हो हा नु स्त्रीत है। कंपा भीता

र् अर्देने हेशया (or मिलुमाया) दशप्देर प्रमानुदामि विश्वेदः (or विदंरः) पर्मा He must go at three o'clock.

He came to India in his twentieth year.

I shall pay you within three months.

At (or during) the first salutation Tibetans present ceremonial scarfs to each other.

The devil disappeared at dusk.

I knew the doctrine of Buddha a long time ago.

I knew the Amban named Shangtāi a short time ago.

At the same time (or At a certain time) he was Chinese Ambassador in Darjeeling.

Since that time, so I have heard, he has died.

रुविन्युन्य (or नन्दुः) सः स्टिः Please do not come till five o'clock.

रे रुक्ष दश मिंद्र लामहायाम मन्द्र मी केता

Then (or At that time) I will receive you, i.e., grant admittance.

मिंद्र-मालुनात्मःश्लेवशःयःदेत्।

At last you have arrived !

रेते हे 'य' स हो पक्ष (or हो पक्ष हो पक्ष without the स) में दिया हिंद 'घट

On the way up to (i.e. before reaching or getting to) the hill top, you will be tired.

क्रनुःगुःरेर्।

In sentences like the following, where the durational signification is obvious, the case-sign (say 5%'A' ĎÖ-LA) is omitted:—

कुः केर्ना मेश्रास्त्रायम् यारेत्।

It has rained for (or during) two hours.

That is to say, it is unnecessary to say & \$\frac{3}{3}\frac{3}\frac{3}\frac{3}{3}\frac{3}{3}\frac{3}{3}\frac{3}{3}\frac{3}{3}\frac{3}{3}\frac{3}{3}\frac{3}{3}\frac{3}{3}\frac{3}{3}\frac{3}{3}\frac{

IX.—THE MODAL CASE.

This Case is intended to include all that is connoted by the term Instrumental Case, and some other additional significations. The signs are:—

বৃষ্ণ' Nম: By, Through, By way of, Via.

55' DANG: With, Against.

51 SA (silent): With, Because, Since, etc. Also the Participial idea.

नेद्रभेश Kyèn-gyi

ਤ੍ਰੋੜ Ch'ir (Literary)

By, Through, On account of, By reason of, etc.

អ្វីកុះក្ Ch'ir-du(Literary)

EXAMPLES :-

किंताश्रीट वश स्निर्मर पर्टेट (or नहेंर्)।

इ.ट्रे.र्चित्रचन्त्रचावश्यः प्रहिश्र।

리,너물다.소.보다.다.호회,너울다. |

अ.चडिट.य.अमू.येश.चडिट.।

स्र भारे क्षार् प्रत्यायम पुरा

ट.क्रु.ज.जश.म.ज.हच.रा.रंट.सैच.वैट.।

ल्वसंयन्कें संकृतः ये न्दास्य या ने ।

चक्रेयःलूट.त्य । चीत्रःत्र्याचयारःध्रुयःषु पु.चश्रशःतःद्रतः

पर्के दे द्रम्म के केंब द्रमा द्रमा

मोडेर. (था.) क्रे.पश.पर्टेट.।

करामरामी मुनियमुका मिसिस्य पार्केराय रेता।

म्पर्टार्शेटः। सुर्वार्योतसार्टे हे म्रीटायमुन्दितस्यम् विसा यम् विसास्य स्वत्यायम् विसा Accost (or call to) him by name.

Seize the horse by the reins.

If you catch the fowl, catch it by the legs.

If you grasp the fish, grasp it by the head.

The lamas spoke through trumpets.

We met (or fell in) with robbers on the road.

The Shyab-pä's (Źhāpés) have had an interview with the Regent.

Will the Regent agree with the opinion of the Kā-löns?

Our soldiers have fought with the enemy, or against the enemy.

Strike the nail with the hammer.

He was ruined by, through, or on account of, the beer-house.

The Päṇ-chhen-rim-po-chhe, or Tsang-päṇ-chhen, called the Ṭashi Lama, came from Ṭashilhümpo via Darjeeling.

The following is Literary from the New Testament :—

ট্রিবর্ত্তমান দ্রী ক্লিব্ মেনের বিশাব্দ ক্লিব্ মা What question (dispute) ye with them?

Colloquially:-

हिंदार्द्धशमानेवै क्रेंन्यवदिकेंन्टार्ह्द

यामुन गुः स्पर्।

Again:-

ट.लुब.तश.श.पहचाश.चुना।

It is I: be not afraid: Literally, It being I, etc.

Colloquially :-

८ संदिर्धः (हिरा) संदिर्हिम्।

The following also is Literary :— $\,$

उदे भुद्र मिन्द्रम् श्रिट or श्रेद्र याश्रिट | Through or by what was he ruined?

X.—THE ABLATIVE CASE.

Postpositions such as 55° Dang, 55° Nä, and 45° Lä, all signifying From, From amongst, From amidst, Out of, etc., are usually assigned to this case; but inasmuch as, when carrying those significations, they really express the idea of Direction from, they have been placed under the heading Terminative Case.

মেই, however, possesses meanings other than Direction from.

Accordingly, AN LA, and NA, may be taken as the signs of the Ablative Case, as expressive of significations such as the following:—

মেষ Lম: Than, Except, Save, But, But for, Besides, etc.

5. NA (with negative): Unless, If .. not.

EXAMPLES:-

ब्रिन् के स्प्रेट । ब्रिन् के स्प्रेट । The Shapé will not stay in India except for a few months, i.e. longer than a few months.

हिंदानी बदायानुसम् स्थानिसम् त्यस्य स्था । यद्भा

There was nobody in the fortress except one soldier.

सट. तुंश सिं श्चेर से त्रुवा। यट स्थान स्थानी स्थान स्थान

८रे तथामाव्य सेर्।

শর্মার্থরের কর্মার্থর দুর্গী করে। শুরু বিশ্বরাধ্যার কর্মার্থর দুর্গী করে।

বন্ধীন মাস্ত্র্ হল। মান্ধীন বাট্টিই। স্ক্রু রমধা

When the Oriental possesses nothing but one piece of cotton cloth he is often happy.

Besides this there is no other.

Unless all the work is done you will get no pay.

Unless travellers are not robbed, i.e. If travellers are robbed, you will all be punished.

नायने हिन के श्रेमश भी हुन व।

Unless ye repent, or If ye repent not (Literary. 1 Luke xiii. 3, 5).

Colloquially :— चिन्द्वित्विन्यसम्बद्धिन्त्

विनिट्स्ये मुलक्षेत्य से व

श्रेव.बि.भ.सिताव।

नामान्त्रात्मान्यामान्य।

Unless you repent.

Unless the dog is at the entrance door.

Unless the petition is presented.

Unless the agreement (bond) has been signed.

The following are Literary expressions used in the New Testament:—

মাস্ক্রার্মশ্রমশ্রমানার্নিশ্বশ্বমান্ত্রমশ্রম্

Except the apostles they all, etc. (Acts viii. 1).

देश्यः बद्दारेद्दार् हिंद्दा कुष्टिय स्थान्य स्थान्य

Besides all this, between us and you is (being) a great gulf (Luke xvi. 26).

वेश.तर.ट्रे.ट्र.वेश.थ्र. etc.

Whosoever shall put away his wife, except it be for fornication, i.e. fornication not having been committed. (Matt. v. 32).

These may be rendered Colloquially thus:-

শ্লী ক্লান্ত্ৰ etc.

Except the apostles they all, etc.

বীধা.ধধা.ধি.বিদাধ। প্রথা.মি.মে.মে.মু.শু.বিশব্দেম্না.নাল্যপ্রামা Whosever shall put away his wife, except it be for fornication—If anybody divorces his wife, fornication not having been committed.

रेक्षमिनिक्ष (or रेक्षेक्स) हर्के **र** विर्वे के कि कर त्याम्याम्य मात्र से किक् से विष्य के कि Besides all this, between us and you is (being) a great gulf, etc.

The expressions Apart from, and Rather than, are rendered thus:-

८.ज. सूर स्वानिश जूर रेडे सम्बर्धिय

I have two rupees, but apart from that I will give you nothing.

चिर्नायन्त्रवाष्ट्रवास्त्रवास्त्रवास्त्रवास्त्रवास्त्रवास्त्रवास्त्रवास्त्रवास्त्रवास्त्रवास्त्रवास्त्रवास्त्रव

I would rather give you food than money.

Or বহুৎ শঞ্জী

Would give.

XI.—THE TERMINATIVE OR TRANSITIVE CASE.

This case denotes the relations of a noun or pronoun with reference to its *Direction* in *Time* or *Space*, either *towards* or *from* something mentioned in the sentence, and it may imply the idea of *motion* as well as that of *rest*. Under it come, as already stated, many expressions signifying *direction from*, which in other books are assigned to the Ablative Case.

The signs of the case as thus defined are:-

5' Du: after final ፫, ፫, ቫ, མ, ར་, ལ་

5' Tu: after final না, 5'5না, ন'

S' RA

: after final vowels.

Z. Ru

N Su: after final N

A' LA: c

commonly used in the Colloquial after anything, and possessing the significations of all the

above signs.

DIRECTION TOWARDS.

55 DANG

da. Na

어쇠. Tỵ

DIRECTION FROM.

EXAMPLE:-

1.—DIRECTION TOWARDS.

אָבּיק ' Bar-du: Up to, Until, As far as, As long as . . not.

५ मुते नर ५ दक्ष मिं का कार्रेट Up till now, I have not seen him.

5.75. Hitherto.

ริลิ สราร or ริ สราร Until then, Up to that time.

মার্থিসমেন্ত্র As long as it has not been obtained, i.e. Until it has been obtained.

দিনা-প্রিবিশ্বন্দ্র As long as he does not die, i.e. Until he dies.

दर्ने वहा द्वारा मार्चे पर प्राप्त मार्च How far is Lhasa from here?

55 አንታ Ďang Nyam-Óu: Together with, Along with, In Company with.

শিন্তি স্থান মান্ত কান্ত কান্ত বিশ্ব নান্ত He has been dwelling with wild beasts in the desert.

รุ่ฏิผร Kyi-bu: Amongst, Amidst, Into the midst of.

बिसी उन्हें अन्यते मुद्ध स्त्रीत स्त्रीत स्त्रीत स्त्रीत स्वर्ण प्रदेश के The cat springs in amongst the twittering sparrows (little gray birds.)

មនុក្ស Gän-du: Towards.

क्षेर्विक्षरेष्ट्रम्माम्बद्गुत्र्व्यामाप्तिनुमा The crowd is going towards the palace.

555 NANG-DU: Into.

ট্রিন্ট্রেন্ড্রেন্রেন্ড্রেন্ড্রেন্ড্রেন্ড্রেন্ড্রেন্ড্রেন্ড্রেন্ড্রেন্ড্রেন্ড্রেন্ড

র্দার T'0ও-TU: In the direction of; Towards.

নানি গ্রমার ব্রান্থনি নান্দ্রামান ক্রান্থনি বিশ্বামান ক্রান

 $\left\{\begin{array}{l} \mathbf{T} \cdot \mathbf{R} \mathbf{A} \\ \mathbf{S} \cdot \mathbf{R} \mathbf{U} \end{array}\right\} To.$

युन्तुमुङ्गर्रहें (or A, or सर्हेर) यहार रेहे The boy has been sent to sea.

মিঅবমার্ক্রমার্মারারি He has come from up there hitherward.

মিন্তান্ত্র উম্পেরের ইব্ He has come from down there hitherward.

নিধাৰ্থা ঠুন আমি থানিব He has come from over there, or yonder, hitherward.

म्बिन्स् देश्वा The ants are swarming near my feet.

575 MA-RU : Down to.

দ্রেমিমান্ত নির্দাণী ঐত্যা I am going down to the bazaar.

 N Su: To, Towards.

रुशासुं (or al') त्रायाणु त्रुमा It is getting towards the time. मिन्द्रामान्त्रास् सेंद्र He has gone to his own abode.

ইনিমাঝ Ch'ō-la, or ইমাঝ Ngö-la: Towards, On, etc.

प्रभागित र्दुर मुँग्राथ पानर या के प्येत् यह सुँग्राथ पाहर प्येत् On this side of the road there are houses, on that side meadows.

र्सम्'र्युटरेनेर्'स्थाटेंबास (or दुनिस्ता) ब्रीन्ब'तुट The army marched towards Tibet.

স্থাম DÜ-LA: To the time; at the time of.

รูมามาสาพัน It came down to the time, i.e. The time arrived รุมามาสาพัน The time will come.

สราฐธาร์ Bar-Nang-bu ? or สราณ Bar-la: Over, above.

युः साभिन दे प्रमि दे पर प्राप्त प्रमा प्रमा The butterfly flits over my head.

মূর্ম Ngön-la: Ahead, In front.

द्भे हें दे त्या कुना Go on ahead (or in front) of me.

2.—DIRECTION FROM.

5Γ' ĎANG: From. This is Literary.

মার্ক্র নিমামর্ক্রমমার বিশেষ বিশেষ The lake is far from the frontier.

धनाह्म प्राप्त प्रमुद्ध प्राप्त प्रमुद्ध का The husk was separated from the grain.

ৰ্ম Na : From.

क्षेत्रेन् मुक्तिमित्राद्याम् नुयम्मित्रमा The cat creeps from under the table.

बिस्राह्म प्राह्म प्रमाह के किया का विकास का विकास का विकास का अधिक के Justice is close to (literally from) a pretty garden.

মি'অ'ব্যাখন'খ্ৰীব'ম'নিচ' He has gone from up there thitherward.

নিজাব্যাহার প্রাথাহিব He has gone from down there thitherward.

५ वर्षा श्रुवा कर प्रशासित त्या त्या है से Henceforth I shall not speak to you.

मुँदि त्री त्रा दे प्रमाद में किमा मि त्रुमा You may walk from here to there, or to that.

Colloquially :-

श्रृंत-दार्धेन्त्राप्तिन्तिन्त्र्यः (or देनाने, or देनान्दाः) सेद्यारेदः

From the beginning it was not so.

সিম্মান্সান্সান্ত্র He originated from the Lotus.—(S. C. Das.)

ने नुस्तान के द्वां के न्या के द्वां के न्या के द्वां के कि younger ones must recite their books by (literally from) heart.—(Amundsen).

NA Lä: Out of.

भे निज्ञ निज्ञ क्षानि हैन में भ्रीना कि drew his cap out of the water.

§ 26.—Numerals.

I.—The Cardinal Numbers, according to 피디지에 (or 중시계) 전자 피디지 DANG-KYI (or TSI-KYI) NAM-DANG, Arithmetical Enumeration.

| English Figure. | Tibetan Figure. | Tibetan Name. | Romanized Equivalent. | | | | |
|--------------------|--------------------|--|--------------------------|--|--|--|--|
| 1 | 2 | म्बेरेमा | Chi'. | | | | |
| 2 | 3 | मार्डेश. | Ňyī. | | | | |
| 3 | 3 | শ্র্ম: | Sum. | | | | |
| 4 | - | ସବି' | Žhyi. | | | | |
| 5 | ٧ | ළ _ | Ňga. | | | | |
| 6 | s | <u> বু</u> শা | Дu'. | | | | |
| 7 | | ন্দুৰ | Ďün. | | | | |
| 11 8 | | ব <u>র্</u> ন্ত্ | Ğyä'. | | | | |
| 9 | | 55 | Ğu. | | | | |
| 10 | 20 | বন্তু, or বন্তু, প্রসামা | Chu, or Chu t'am pa. | | | | |
| 11 | 22 | नहुःम्हिम् | Chug-chi'. | | | | |
| 12 | 2 23 | वद्धःमिन्नेशः | chuģ-nyī. | | | | |
| 18 | 93 | নস্ত,নাপ্ত্রম | Chug-sum. | | | | |
| 14 | 90 | ସଞ୍ଜ ସବି | Chub-žhyi. | | | | |
| 18 | 2 v | বর্জনূ | Chö-nga. | | | | |
| 16 | 25 | নম্ভ বুশ | Chu-ḍu'. | | | | |
| 17 | 70 | ସଞ୍ଜ୍ୟୁ ବ୍ୟ | Chub-ďün. | | | | |
| | 72.5 | The state of the s | | | | | |

| English Figure. | Tibetan Figure. | Tibetan Name. | Romanized Equivalent. | | | | |
|--------------------|--------------------|--|--------------------------------------|--|--|--|--|
| 18 | 22 | নই ন্রু | | | | | |
| 19 | 20 | বন্ত:বৃশ্ | Chu-ğu. | | | | |
| 20 | 20 | के.सी. or के.सी.सभारा | Nyi-shu, or Nyi- shu t'am-pa. | | | | |
| | | हिन्स महिमा, or | Nyi-shu tsag-chi'. | | | | |
| 21 | 32 | े अर मार्डमा, or | Nyer-chi'. | | | | |
| *• | | ्रि:भु:स'मिडेमा', or १९२:मिडेमा', or सम्मिडेमा | Tsag-chi'. | | | | |
| 22 | | | (Nyi-shu tsag-nyī. | | | | |
| | 22 | ्रे.पु.इ.मा३ूश, or इ.मा३ूश | Tsag-nyī. | | | | |
| 30 | 30 | র্থম.প্র. or র্থম.প্র.রম.ব. | Sum-chu, or Sum- chu t'am-pa. | | | | |
| 31 | | (মুমান্ত মিঁ দাউদা', or | Sum-chu sog-chi'. | | | | |
| | 30 | ্র্রমান্ত র্মানাত্তনা, or মানাত্তনা | Sog-chi'. | | | | |
| 40 | 2 0 | ন্ত্ৰিন্ত, or ন্ত্ৰিন্ত্ৰস্থান | Žhyib-chu, o Žhib-chu t'am pa. | | | | |
| 41 | مرب | (मल्यु ल्या विमा, or | (Žhib-chu źhye-chi | | | | |
| | | (ब्रिम्बर्डिया | Źhye-chi'. | | | | |
| 50 | γo | পূ'নত্ত', or পূ'নত্ত'সম'ন' | Ngab-chu, o: Ngab-chu t'am pa. | | | | |
| 51 | V 2 | ∫ শূ-বস্তু দেন্য্রিনা, or | S Ngab-chu nga-chi' | | | | |
| | | ि दःमिर्देमाः | Nga-chi'. | | | | |
| 60 | ్తం | र्वुमार्खः, or र्वुमार्खः प्रस्रायः | Dug-chu, or Dug chu t'am-pa. | | | | |
| 61 | S) | (ठुमार्डः रे'मारुमा, or | Dug-chu re-chi'. | | | | |

| English Figure. | Tibetan Figure. | Tibetan Name. | Romanized Equivalent. | | | | |
|--------------------|--------------------|---|-----------------------------------|--|--|--|--|
| 70 | νο | ন্তুৰ্ভ্ত, or ন্তুৰ্ভ্ৰন্মন | Ďün-chu, or Ďün- chu t'am-pa. | | | | |
| 71 | บา | ्रयपुत्रः छु: र्नेतृः मारुमाः, or ो र्नेतः मारुमाः | Ďön-chu dön-chi'. Ďön-chi'. | | | | |
| 80 | ۷۰ | মর্কুদ্'ড্ড', or মর্কুদ্'ভ্র'ঘ্ম'ম' | Ğya'-chu, or Ğya' chu t'am-pa. | | | | |
| 81 | £9 | ्रिमुं ५ रु.मु.म् हेम्। , or मु.म् हेम्। | Ğyä'-chu gya-chi' Gya-chi'. | | | | |
| 90 | ෙ | र्गु'नहु', or र्गु'नहु'शस्य | Ğub-chu, or Ğub | | | | |
| 91 | e <i>9</i> | ∫ ন্দ্ৰু'ন&'ল্লি'ন্বিনা', or ল্লি'ন্তিনা' | Ğub-chu go-chi'. | | | | |
| 100 | 700 | বন্ত্র", or বন্ত্রীস্থস'ম' | Ğya, or Ğya-t'am pa. | | | | |
| 101 | 202 | वर्तुः ५८:मडिमः | Ğya Ğdang chi'. | | | | |
| 200 | 200 | कृपम् , or क्रियम् | Nyib-gya, or Nyīb gya. | | | | |
| 300 | ३०० | য়ৢয়য়ঢ়ৢ৾ | Sum-gya. | | | | |
| 400 | <i>2</i> 00 | নন্ত্ৰি'নন্ত্ৰ | Žhyib-gya, | | | | |
| 500 | V-co | 원· 코 妻. | Ňgab gya. | | | | |
| 1000 | 2000 | ब्रेंट', or ब्रेंट स्ना | Tong, or Tong-ț'a' | | | | |
| 5500 | v,v00 | ब्रूट स्माभृर् न भिन्न मु | Tong-tʻa' nga dang ngab-gya. | | | | |
| 10,000 | 20,000 | म्नि', or म्नि'स्नना' | Ţʻi, or Ţʻi-ţʻa'. | | | | |
| 100,000 | 200,000 | ব্রুম', or ব্রুম'র্না | Bum, or Bum-ț'a' | | | | |
| 1,000,000 | 2,000,000 | ≰ग.लो. | Sa-ya. | | | | |
| 10,000,000 | 20,000,000 | ਤੇਕ. | J'e-wa. | | | | |

| English. | Tibetan. | Romanized equivalent. | | | |
|--------------------|----------------------------|-----------------------|--|--|--|
| 100 millions | <u> </u> | Dung-ch'ur. | | | |
| 1000 millions | ह्य-प्रनुसः ॐ | T'er-bum. | | | |
| 10,000 millions | विराद्युमाळेन्या | T'er-bum ch'em-po. | | | |
| 100,000 millions. | सिना सिना. | T'ag-t'i'. | | | |
| A billion | सिमा सिमा केव रेंग | T'ag-ț'i' ch'em-po. | | | |
| 10 billions | ২ ব:বশুঝ | Rab-tam. | | | |
| 100 billions | ন্ন 'ন্মুম'ক্রিব'ন্ | Rab-tam ch'em-po. | | | |
| 1000 billions | নাসমশ্ব | Ťam. | | | |
| 10,000 billions | मानुस्रक्ष केव में | Ťam-ch'em-po. | | | |
| 100,000 billions | ব ূলুমাহা | Tī'. | | | |
| 1,000,000 billions | বুলুদাঝ ক্রব ইন | Tī ch'em-po. | | | |

N.B.—To the above succeed progressive numbers increasing by multiples of ten up to sixty enumerations, counting 100 millions as the ninth. These sixty enumerations are used for astronomical and astrological purposes. Sanskrit equivalents exist only up to the fifty-first enumeration. See Rai Sarat Chandra Das Bahadur's Dictionary, article 到氏的 Grang.

II.—The Cardinal Numbers, according to শাস্ত্রস্থানুহে Ka-k'ai Nam-dang, Alphabetical Enumeration.

The following system of Numerical Notation is employed by Tibetans in their Registers, Indices, and the like. It only goes up to 300, and consists of an adaptation of the TA. It may be regarded as the equivalent of our own method of Notation by means of the Roman letters.

| 1 | to | - 30 | | η, | A. | শা, | and | so | on | to | নে. |
|-----|------|------|--|------|------------|----------|-----------|-----|----|-----|-----------|
| 31 | | | | नें, | Ä, | मीं, | " | 99 | 29 | " | હ્યું. |
| 61 | ,, | 90 | | Ŋ, | ٿ , | 罚, | " | ••• | 99 | 99 | প্রে. |
| 91 | ,,, | 120 | | गों, | 户, | मों, | 99 | ** | " | ,,, | छो. |
| 121 | , ,, | 150 | | 而, | Ã, | मां, | 52 | 99 | ,, | ,, | छ्य. |
| 151 | ,, | 180 | | η, | 四, | मां, | 29 | ,,, | 99 | 99 | (Z) |
| 181 | | | | भू त | यि, | धं, | " | " | " | 39 | म दिश्य द |
| 211 | 1) | 240 | | F, | म्लाम् व | मा, | | | 99 | | (J) |
| 241 | ,, | 270 | | ों, | में में | भें, | " | 3 | 99 | 22 | S. |
| 271 | " | 300 | | Fr. | À, | त्रीम् त | 33 | ,, | " | 33 | S. |

NOTES.

1.—PRONUNCIATION:

The Colloquial custom of pronouncing the prefix of a second syllable with, and as though it were part of, the preceding syllable, is really incorrect, and is not followed in Literary Tibetan. Thus, न्यानिमा Eleven, pronounced Chuá-chi' in Colloquial, is pronounced Chu-chi' in Literary Tibetan. So न्यानिमा Fourteen, pronounced Chub-ट्रमपा in Colloquial, is pronounced Chub-ट्रमपा in Literary Tibetan.

2.—Affixes.

SAC T'AM-PA, signifies full, or complete, and is almost exclusively used with the full tens, up to and inclusive of a hundred; meaning thereby a collective body, or whole lot, of any of those numbers. It is, however, similarly, but much less frequently, applied to numbers below ten.

After a hundred and with thousands 적지 T'A' is used. Also after expressions denoting periods of time, such as 지方자격지 Ďtn-Ṭ'A', a week; 골목지 DA-Ṭ'A', a month.

With numbers above thousands at Ts'o; is used.

As regards all these affixes, however, their use or non-use is quite optional.

3.—Conjunctions.

Note that where units are connected with some multiple of ten, the conjunction used is different for each series. In the 20 series it is Tsa; in the 30 series, Tso; in the 40 series, That; in the 50 series, That; in the 60 series, That; in the 70 series, That; in the 80 series, That; in the 90 series, That; in the 90 series, That Go. With the hundreds it is Thank. It would not, however, be wrong to use Thank in all cases. In Literary Tibetan both Thank, and one of the other conjunctions (usually) That, are used together. Thus That That Thank Thank I are used together. Thus That Thank I are used together. Thus Thank I are used together.

In the Colloquial the short forms সুস্ট্র Tsag-chi', 21; সুস্ট্র Tsag-chi', 21; সুস্ট্র Tsag-nyi, 22; ইস্ট্রেস্ Sog-chi', 31; ইস্ট্রেস্ Sob-टhyi, 34; and the like, are very often heard instead of the longer forms, কুনুস্ক্রেস্
Nyi-shu-tsag-chi', 21, etc.

4.—The Indefinite Article, see § 28.

5.—APPROXIMATE NUMBERS.

Expressions like two or three, nine or ten, are rendered by putting the numbers in immediate juxtaposition. Ex. निर्देश महाराज NYI-SUM two-three; ज्ञाना अधि-снण, nine-ten. If the speaker likes, he may

add ইনা Chi', a or an, to any of these expressions. Thus, নাইম'ন্

Another method is to employ the adverb ਰੱਲ TSAM, About, Just about, As many as. Ex. 환기한기 전자 Sog CHI' TSAM, About 31, or As many as 31; or the adverbs 5'의자 HA-LAM, 지호 GA-CH'EN, 풍자 TSAR, or 직접하다 DAM-LA, signifying nearly, almost. In these cases the adverb follows the numeral it qualifies.

6.—ORDINAL NUMBERS.

The first is rendered 55% Dang-po, and The very first \$550% JE-Dang-po. With these exceptions the ordinals are merely the cardinals plus the particle 4 PA. Ex. 43844 NYI-PA, The second; 4524 Chö-nga-pa, The fifteenth; 354384 NYER-SUM-PA, or 3478844 NYER-SUM-PA, The twenty-third.

7.—DISTRIBUTIVE NUMBERS.

When simple numerals are repeated in juxtaposition, e.g. TIND SUM-SUM, Three-three, the meaning may be either three each, or three at once, or three at a time, or in threes, according to the way the sentence is framed. For instance, phrases like Three at a time, or In threes, or One at a time, are rendered by help of the expression 5% 5% J'Ä-NÄ, or CHÄ NÄ, literally Having done or Having made. Thus:—

मि.क्.शंभाशंभावेशःयश्चरःवेटः। मि.क्.शंभाशंभावेशःयशःवेरःश्टः।

They set out in threes, or three at a time.

They arrived one by one, or one at a time.

Expressions like Three each, Two each, One each, are rendered by RE-RE and a repeated numeral, but without the 5 N AN JAN JAN.

Thus :-

भेरेरे अञ्चेर में शुम्र श्रुम श्रुम श्रिम। Each man got three rupees. देश यारेरे आर्चेर में रेरेश्रेम। Give each coolie one rupee.

In the case of composite numerals like বৃষ্ণাইনা চঁত্ৰ্ম-দোৰ, Seventy-one, only the last number of the compound is repeated. Ex.:—
ব্ৰুম্ন্তিনা স্ত্ৰ্মান্তিনা চঁত্ৰ্ম-দোৰ্জ-দোৰজ-দোৰ্জ-দ

8.—AGGREGATES.

Expressions like The two together, or Both, or All three, or The whole ten, may be rendered with the aid of the particles T KA, or T CHA, or T PO, affixed to the cardinal. Ex.:—T NYT-KA, Both, or The two together; T NYT-KA, Sum-PO, All three, or The three together; TT GU-CHA, The whole nine.

Fo, thus affixed, may also signify the aforesaid, if the context so requires.

9.—Fractions.

These are usually expressed by adding the word & Ch'A, Part, to the cardinal, which is sometimes put in the Genitive Case. Thus:—

hrd is rendered by সাম্মত Sum-ch'A.

1 nd ,, ,, ,, র্মানাট্টিমান্ত Sod-মুণা ch'a, or মানাট্টিমাণ্ডীনে Sod-মুণা kyi ch'a.

Thoughth,, ,, ,, 翼下齿 Tong-ch'a, or 翼下門齿 Tong-ch'a.

²grd ,, ,, ,, না**মু**ম'ক'নাগুম' Sum-ch'a nyi.

³th ,, ,, ,, স্থিক'সা্ধ্রস' ŹнΥΙ-он'а sum.

As regards ½, there is a special expression, namely, টুর্শা сн'ম'-кл.
l½, may be rendered two ways: either স্ট্রার্ডের্মা

CHI' DANG CH'E'-KA, OF BJ T T T T TO CH'E' DANG MYI, With a half, two. The latter is the commoner usage in the Colloquial.

31 is rendered সাধ্যম'ন্দ'নন্তিক Sum dang źhyi-ch'a, or নাত্তিকসাধ্যম'ন্দ'নন্তি Żhyi-ch'a sum dang źhyi, With 3ths four.

अन्यानाम्बन्धाम् प्रतानाम्बन्धाम् प्रतानाम् प्रतानाम् व्याप्त प्रतानाम व्याप्त प्रतान प

10.—ADVERBIAL CARDINAL NUMBERS.

Expressions like Once, Twice, Thrice, Four times, etc., are rendered by the word 호텔 Ts'ar, or 회토자 T'eng, Time, followed by the desired cardinal number. Ex.:— 호텔 기상기 Ts'ar-chi', or 회토자 기상기 T'eng-chi', Once; 호텔 기상지 Ts'ar-nyi, or 회토자 기상지 T'eng-nyi Twice; 호텔 기상지 Ts'ar-sum or 회토자 기상지 T'eng-sum, Thrice; 호텔 기상기 Ts'ar-zhyi or 회토자 기상기 T'eng-zhyi, Four times.

Another word with the same signification, as 5 T's AR and 7 T'ENG is 45 Län, but it is not so much used in the Colloquial.

Other expressions that may here be mentioned are:—

ANG: LAM-SANG: At once, Forthwith, Straightway, Immediately.

うるにあるप्रिया Da Rung Ts'AR-CHI': Once more.

ন্ত্ৰতেই শান্ত্ৰ Da-rung ts'ar-nyi নূত্ৰতেই শান্ত্ৰ Da-rung n'eng-nyi $Twice\ more.$

養、 Ts'er, A separate time or occasion, or instance.

ਛੋੱਝ ਛੋੱਝ Ts'er ts'er, Many times, On separate occasions, Repeatedly.

পুশ कर Shud-Ts'er, A separate time or occasion.

ਲੱਵਾਈ Ts'ar mang-po: Many times.

ਲੱਝਲਵਾਵਾਂ Ts'ar mang-po rang (with negative): Not many times.

Once upon a time, or Once, or One day, referring either to the past or the future, may be rendered रूसकर (or यह, or श्रेट्स) महिना (लेन or नेना) Dü Ts'ar (or Län, or T'Eng) chi' (zhyi', or shi'); or रूसरे लेना Dü-re-zhyid-di Ts'e.

11.—ADVERBIAL ORDINAL NUMBERS.

These are formed by adding $\overset{\sim}{\sim}$ RA, to the $\overset{\sim}{\sim}$ PO, or $\overset{\sim}{\sim}$ PA, of the ordinals. Ex.:—

55 DANG-POR: Firstly.

পৃষ্ঠ শ্বন Nyi-par: Secondly.

रुपाउँपादार Tsag-chig-par: Twenty-one'thly (= Twenty-firstly.)

12.—DEFINITE AND INDEFINITE NUMERALS.

Among these may be classed the following:-

मानेशामा Nyi-KA, Both, e.g., वर्रेमानेशामार्नेमानेशामा Both this and that.

মুন্দের সম্প্রাম্পর বিষয়ের বিষয়ের করে। Both the pretty girls have arrived.

শুন্দের Su-Yang, Anybody; (with a negative) = None, Nobody.
নানাই Ga-Gai, Anything; (with a negative) = None, Nothing.

The Literary forms of TITA GA-GAI, are TEWE GANG-YANG, and SWE CHI-YANG.

Another expression is স্ট্র্যুত্তের Chiá-yang, Even one; (with a negative)—None, Nobody, Nothing.

EXAMPLES.

मिं केंद्रे दि दश्राशुः WE होत्रशं अ ger | None of them arrived.

रु: समादे र्के दे वद वहार समामिदे देश None of these things will suit me. गुःस देन or देश ये स देन।

৭ই শাই শাই ব্যানাই শানী শাসতে None, or neither of these two will do.

Expressions like A whole (something), An entire (something), A complete (something), A full (something), are rendered by $\neg \neg \neg \neg \neg$ Gang-Gang-Gang-Gang-Gang-K'a, or simply $\neg \neg \neg \neg$ Gang, or $\neg \neg \neg \neg$ Gang; and the word $\neg \neg \neg \neg \neg$ Chi', one, or $\neg \neg \neg$ Chi', A, An, is not made use of at all in such cases. Ex.:—

र्मन्भे र्देश मूह निन्द्राम (or महः) The soldiers are roasting a whole ox.

न्दें श्रुट श्रदाम संदे**र।**

This is not a complete story.

मिर्द.।

Entirely is rendered by 55. Ba'-be, used only with a negative. Thus:—

ਤੋਂ अ'र्रे अ'र्रे अ'र्रे । Those accounts are not altogether (or entirely) accurate.

All, whole, entire, may also be rendered by 역자되면, T'AM CHA', 최다면 Ts'Ang-Ma, and 젊다다 Gang-K'A, or 되다면 Gang-Ga. Ex.:—

মমাশ্বার্থিকার প্রমান্তর্থে মিনা Suddenly the whole crowd disappeared.

মুধান্মধান্ত্র্বির্থিন। All the women were frightened.
বিশ্বসাধান্ত্র Ďe t'am-chà', not বিক্রিশ্বসাধান্ত্র Ďen-tso t'am-chà':
They all.

মান Gang, or সাম Gang, is also used in connection with weights and measures instead of সাইসা, or ইসা Chi', One, A, An.

So also, in connection with weights and measures and the Tibetan monetary system, $\tilde{\xi}$ Do, is used instead of $\tilde{\xi}$ NYI, \tilde{t} NYI, \tilde{t} NYI, \tilde{t} and signifies \tilde{t} Cuple. Otherwise the word for \tilde{t} couple is \tilde{t} Ch'A.

But a phrase like Two-legged, or Three-legged, is rendered with the particle ζ'' , thus: $-\overline{\eta}\zeta'\overline{\eta}\widetilde{\zeta}'\zeta''$ or $\overline{\eta}\zeta'\overline{\zeta}'\zeta''$ Here ζ'' means possessed of.

Other expressions are: স্ট্রাস্থ্র Double, or Two-fold; স্ট্রাস্থ্র Twice-born; স্ট্রাস্ক্রেস্ট্রাস্থ্র Every second day.

13.—Noun Substantives.

Ts'o, the Plural-sign used in the Colloquial, is never expressed, either in speech or in writing, after a numeral adjective, or numeral adjectives, the noun-substantive thereby qualified always remaining in the singular. Ex.:—

र्रो मार्सुझ (not क्री के मार्सुझ) मिर्द्रा Three men will go with you. अनुसार् भेदा पिरा

14.—NOTATION BY LETTERS.

The use of the TRARAM SAM DANG, or Alphabetical Enumeration, has already been explained (See § 26 II). In this connection, when references in Indices, or Registers, or to quotations from learned works are being cited, it is customary to qualify the numeral letter by affixes such as TPA, TR PAR, and TR PA-LA, of which the first denotes the Book, Register, Index, or the like, to which reference is being made, and the last two denote that the particular quotation or citation is to be found in some particular Book, etc.

Ex.:-

T'O A-PA: Register No. 30.

75 777 PO-TI K'A-PAR: In Volume No. 2.

ম্নামান T'o GA-PA-LA: In Index No. 3.

CHAPTER II.

ETYMOLOGY.

§ 27.—THE DEFINITE ARTICLE.

The Definite Article THE (which is really only an abbreviation of THAT) is represented in Tibetan in various ways, the principal being the words 3 DI, and 5 DE, of which the former is usually said to mean This, and the latter That.

Properly, 35 or 5 when used at all, should always follow the noun or adjective which it distinguishes.

As a rule it is only used when the distinguishing or demonstrative idea is intended to be conveyed.

EXAMPLES:-

श्रेष्ट्रिन्द्रायाः श्रेनशः तुरः।

This man arrived first.

দ্র্বি-শূষাবন্দ্রের স্থাবন্ধ্রার । The good man whom you sent.

ग्रस्मिद्देशस्त्री

That pretty girl.

As a matter of fact Tibetans altogether discard the article in conversation, unless they really desire to express the demonstrative or distinguishing idea.

EXAMPLES :-

श्रे.लूट.मी.पर्मा

The man is coming.

하다 Shut the door.

झ्रीमट.सुश्रा

Open the window.

A distinction, however, in the use of 35° and 5° is made between the nearer and the remoter relation, in regard both to time and space. For instance, when the article is intended to distinguish some person or thing already referred to, but to whom or to which reference is again being made, then, on the occasion of the second or any subsequent reference, Tibetans use $\hat{\mathbf{5}}$. DE; $\mathbf{6}$ DI having been used on the occasion of the first reference.

The man has arrived (referring to somebody already mentioned).

Notice also how $3\overline{5}$ and $\overline{5}$ are used in a phrase like this :—

র্বী-সমাম (or সিমাম) আমোনামাসের This is the messenger who came yesterday.

(N.B.—주환경 yesterday, is Colloquial, 주전 is Literary).

So, if on the occasion of the first reference, the object distinguished was a distant object, then $\hat{\xi}$ would be used; $\hat{\zeta}$ being employed to distinguish a near or present object. Ex.:—

মিন্দ্রামে (or মামা) আমেসাম্ব That man (referring to somebody at a distance) is the messenger who came yesterday.

When, moreover, the article distinguishes first one and then another of two objects, both of which are present, and which are being contrasted, or to which an alternative reference is being made, then, in the case of the one, \Im would be used, and, in the case of the other, \Im Ex.:—

র্মান্দ্রী মানুবানাদ্র ক্রিন্দী This man cannot go, but that man can go (will go).

Practically, therefore, in addition to representing the article The, 35° and 5° respectively also represent the distinguishing adjectives This and That. They also respectively represent This one and That one; he, she, it.

PLURAL.

The Colloquial plural of $\mathcal{A}_{\mathcal{T}}^{\mathcal{T}}$ is $\mathcal{A}_{\mathcal{T}}^{\mathcal{T}}^{\mathcal{T}}$ (pronounced Din-Ts'o), The, These, They: and that of $\mathcal{A}_{\mathcal{T}}^{\mathcal{T}}$ is $\mathcal{A}_{\mathcal{T}}^{\mathcal{T}}^{\mathcal{T}}$ (pronounced Den-Ts'o) The, Those, They.

Both articles, however, are often used in the singular to distinguish collective nouns. In such cases they precede the word they distinguish. Ex.:—

| ८र्रे माशुक्ष। | These three |
|--------------------------|----------------|
| रिष्टा | $Those\ five.$ |
| ५ ने श्रम्भ श्रन् | $All\ these.$ |
| रेक्षराय। | All those. |

The following is Literary:—
নাধুদেনিশার স্থান প্রাকৃত্ব প্রস্থা All these sayings pleased greatly.

নিশান্ত্রদা।

Where a plural noun is qualified by an adjective, and the whole is distinguished by the article, it is the article which takes the plural sign $\widetilde{\mathfrak{F}}$ Ts'o, and it is the $\widetilde{\mathfrak{F}}$ which takes whatever case-sign there may be.

2. Another method by which the Definite Article is represented is by using the particle $\hat{\beta}$. NI; but this is rather Literary than Colloquial. In a long and involved sentence it may be placed after the principal noun, or noun-phrase, so as to distinguish it prominently. It may also be used to emphasize a particular word or expression, and may even be employed in addition to $\hat{\beta}$ or $\hat{\delta}$.

Ex.:-

र अमें निक्व मार्डेश दे।

The twelve ra-gos (or ra-heads).

श्रेने श्रेसस उन्गुन प्रशासिन ने प्रमाश

Mankind are the noblest of all animals.

नगान ने ने नगोंन सकें मान्य सक्तानु

And the word was with God (John i. 1.)

चिवाशासन्दः।

- 3. The functions of the Definite Article are sometimes performed by the particles Ξ^* PA and Ξ^* PO, when affixed to numerals. (See § 26, Notes 6, 8, 14.)

कुंकूर.।

Great and small.

भी माना नहीं।

Birth, Old age, Sickness, Death.

The conjunction 55° Dang, And, is also discarded in such expressions.

The particles under notice and conjunctions are also discarded in enumerations of nouns that are in apposition or contrast. Ex.:—

रेर्न्स् Hope and Fear.

र्ना झ्ना Virtue and Vice.

শার্ম'ঝা Heaven and Earth.

In a sentence like $\widehat{\mathcal{R}}$ ' $\widehat{\mathcal{A}}$ ' $\widehat{\mathcal{A}$ ' $\widehat{\mathcal{A}}$ ' $\widehat{\mathcal{A}$ ' $\widehat{\mathcal{A}}$ ' $\widehat{\mathcal{A}}$ ' $\widehat{\mathcal{A}}$ ' $\widehat{\mathcal{A}}$ ' $\widehat{\mathcal{A}}$ ' $\widehat{\mathcal{A}$ ' $\widehat{\mathcal{A}}$ ' $\widehat{\mathcal{A}}$ ' $\widehat{\mathcal{A}}$ ' $\widehat{\mathcal{A}}$ ' $\widehat{\mathcal{A}}$ ' $\widehat{\mathcal{A$

Sometimes however a phrase is contracted and the particle omitted in both its members. Ex.: 377 The pillar of hope.

5. The student may also be reminded of the various affixes set out at the end of § 24, since they too occasionally perform the functions of the Definite Article.

§ 28.—THE INDEFINITE ARTICLE.

1. ইস্ A, An, Some, is a modification of স্ট্রস্ One, and is seen in the following forms, which may be used even in the Colloquial, if it is desired to be very correct, though as a matter of fact the form ইস্ Chr' is the one most favoured:—

উনা after final না, না, or না ন্না after all vowels, or after final দা, না, না, না, না, or মা

2. Being an adjective when it qualifies a noun, and an adverb when it qualifies an adjective, its place in the sentence is immediately after the noun, or noun and adjective, that it qualifies. Ex.:—

3. $\Im \eta$ and not the noun or adjective to which it is annnexed, takes the case-sign, but only in what we would call the Nominative. In the other cases $\Im \eta$ is usually dropped. Ex.:—

हानुद्रस्त्रस्य छिनानीश्रादार्के दिनात्रस्यः A strange horse has eaten our hay. নত্রশ্বানীর

ट मार्डट में दे दिन्स यान स्द्रिण भेरि। I live near a large river.

4. Annexed to approximate numerals, it signifies collectiveness.

Thus:—

भ्रामासुस्र मले लिम्।

A group of three or four men.

नुस्रमाञ्चर सूट स्यामाडेमामानुस येमा।

A force of one or two thousand soldiers.

5. Used with the adverb র্থা Tsam, About, it signifies Some. Thus:—
থ্রাম্বর্লাম্বর্ল্বর্লাম্ব

Another expression for Some is বি.পৃষ্ঠা K'A-shā, and another is ব্যাস্থিত Tod-tse.

The Literary form of A.A. is AAA. AAI. GA-ZHYI'.

A few, Solely, Only, Alone, may be rendered in Colloquial by বৃশ্ই Tod-TSE, প্রশা SHA-TA', and স্টিন্ই CHIG-PO; and in Literature by ব্ৰহ্মি Bম-ঠম্মা'.

6. Affixed to Interrogative Pronouns, the Article signifies (in Literary Tibetan) Whoever, Whatever, Whichever, Anyone, Anything. Thus:—

सु विना गुँस प्रदे सेना नीस प्रमु म्पट etc.

Whoever with loving eyes should even regard, etc. (S.C.D.), i.e. anyone who, etc.

देवे द्रायामार विमा (or के विमा) ही प्रमा।

There is nothing (anything, with negative) in it.

The Article is also used thus in Literature:-

नाट ब्रिमा मि अर्थे मुन्से मीश

On account of some law-suit.

रे'लेमानु नम्बा

What (is it) wanted for?

रु वियान

Once, on some occasion, some time.

के भिमा वशा

After a little, some time afterwards.

7. Affixed in any of its appropriate forms to a verbal root, it imports in Literature the Imperative Mood as addressed to servants and inferiors, and also the Hortative and Optative Moods. Thus:—

নুঁহা-বিশা Do; Let do.

নুঁহা-বিশা Let. do; may..do;

নুহা-বিশা May be done.

In the Colloquial also it is frequently used to express an emphatic order, and commonly takes the form ব্লা Shi', though it would be more correct to say বিলা Shi', বিলা Zhyi', or ইলা Chi', according to rule. Ex.:—

8. Here may also be mentioned 키다띠다 ANY. Ex.:— 국국도취국공기자자기다띠다였다. Is there any fresh news to-day?

§ 29.—THE NOUN.

A .- Structure.

- 1. The Tibetan Noun ends in either a consonant or a vowel, and is either:—
 - (a) A Monosyllable without any affixed particle, and either without or with any vowel-sign, head-letter, subjunct or prefix. Ex.:—
 - 3' Fish; 된 End; A' Mountain-pass; A' Flesh; N' Earth, soil, ground, place; N' Man; N' Fire; J' Water; J' Bird, fowl; 지河 Head; N' Door; A' Deer; N' Wound;

河 Year; 河 Food, provisions; 55 Head (Honorific); 對 Hair (Human, on head).

Sometimes, however, the particle does not indicate gender. Ex.:— None: A mountain-shrub; Fin Day, sun; Fin Evening; Monk, priest; Fin Music; Fin A kind of tree; BA-WA, Goitre: INTO Pledge; HIN Envelope, wrapper.

Sometimes the particle serves merely to differentiate the meanings of roots otherwise similarly or somewhat similarly spelt. Ex.:—

ইবিমা To show, to teach: but ইবিমা Autumn; দাম Marrow, pith, descent, origin; but দামমা Foot: মার্মি Confidence: but মার্মিমাশা The expanded hood of a snake.

If the particle is either \mathfrak{A} , \mathfrak{A} , \mathfrak{A} , or \mathfrak{A} , it may be and often is dropped (especially when followed by an adjective), without affecting the meaning of the word. Ex.:—

मूद्र चें केंद्र में मूद्र केंद्र The or a great elephant. मुंद्र चेंद्र चेंद्

Some of such particles perform the functions of DIMINUTIVES.

Thus, in the case of \S , the inherent \S , or \S , of the final or the

only consonant of the noun, is turned into \$\overline{\mathbb{N}}, and is followed by the particle. Ex.:—

3' Fish; 3G' Little fish; I' Cow; IG' Calt.

In other cases the final consonant, if a \P , is cut off the noun, and turned into a second syllable, to which $\acute{Z}hyab$ -kyu is added. Ex.:—

প্রা' Hand; প্রা' Little hand; খ্রা' Child; খ্রা' Little child;

In other cases the Diminutive particle is simply added to the primitive noun as it stands. Ex.:— \Re Man; \Re Mannikin; \Im 5 Sack; \Im 5 Sacklet.

Another way of expressing the Diminutive is to qualify the noun by the adjective $\xi \Gamma$ Small. Ex.:—

মন্ব্ৰদেহন্ত্ৰ A little inn. ব্ৰিক্ত A little mind, narrow mind.

Or lastly—

(c) A DISSYLLABLE, OR EVEN A POLYSYLLABLE, either without or with a particle. Those nouns, and especially the polysyllabic nouns, which are mostly proper names, and sometimes even amount to phrases, are often comparatively modern words which have either gradually developed or been deliberately compounded out of originally simple elements. Ex.:—

ন্বিশ্বনা Chair; প্রী Cat; মান্ধ Layman; ক্র্থেনা Contract; বর্ত্তর মূল্য Diligence, industry, zeal; ন্ত্রি ট্রম City; পুর্বিশ্ব or মার্ম মান্ত্র Advocate or pleader; পুর্বা Petitioner; শ্পুর্বা Nye-źhyu, Petition; প্রশ্পুর্বা Gamester, juggler with words; প্রামান Tobacco; প্রামানির তা প্রামান্ত্র মান্ত্র Ch'en-pem-ma, (Colloquial), or প্রসাম্বর্জা Literary), Butterfly.

N.B.—Words with the definite particles \Im , \Im , etc., are generally used without the article \Im , or \Im , unless the latter is intended to express *This* or *That*.

2. Besides the particles above referred to, mention may be made of SIF5 K'XN, which, annexed to substantives or verbal roots, is extensively used in the Colloquial to signify a person who, in some capacity or character, is connected with some particular act, state, or thing. Ex.:—

श्रुद्धान्तरः Guard: ५ अद्भान्नरः Liar: श्रेनाः त्रसुतः स्त्रान्तरः Magician; द्विशः सिन्दः Author: सन्। स्री-स्री-द्वान्तरः Deceiver: श्रेन्द्रस्त्रान्तरः Murderer: त्रान्द्रस्त्रान्तरः Informant.

In book-language the following may be found: -

ন্মান্ত্ Dancer; মহামান্ত Guide: দ্বীমান্ত Flutist; মানত Violinist, harpist: নিমানত Joiner, carpenter: নাপ্ত মানত Bow-maker; মানত Artisan, worker: মানত Peasant, agriculturist, raïat.

Such compounds in মান্ত (at least in the Literary language) may take the indicative particles \mathcal{A} , $\widetilde{\mathcal{A}}$, $\widetilde{\mathcal{A}}$, or $\widetilde{\mathcal{A}}$, as expressive not only of the definite or indefinite article but also of gender. Ex.:—

3. Instead of AF5 use is sometimes made of the verb 3577 To do.

Sometimes, even in the Colloquial, both $\Im 5$ and $\Im 5$ are used together, either with or without the Indicative Particles $\Im 5$, $\Im 5$, though in the Colloquial these are commonly discarded. Ex.:—

 Literary.

 독취 경국 제주 (Common)

 독취 경국 제주 지

 (Masculine)

 독취 경국 제주 지

 (Feminine)

N.B.—When 35, or 5 or the indefinite article 37 is used with any of the above, the indicative particle is discarded, e.g.:—

ন্শু ব্রিম্ম্ব্রে The walker, That walker. ন্শু ব্রিম্ম্ব্রেশ্ব

COLLOQUIAL.

র্মান্ত্রস্থান্তর্ব Agriculturist, Farmer. অমান্ত্রস্থান্তর্ব Guide. मिश्र-चिन-चिन-स्थाननः Guarantor. स्नाश-चिन-चिन-सामनः Helper.

4. §5, however, is not the only auxiliary that takes the affix AF5 in this way. There are others; for instance, §7 Ex.:—

र्हेर्यमुपस्य Arguer, Reasoner.

दरञ्जिन्समिन Roarer.

हेमाञ्चा वास्त्र Briber.

हैं शंजुन सम्ब Calculator.

In fact, the functions of $\mathbb{A}[\mathbb{A}_{3}^{-}]$, \mathbb{A}_{3}^{-} , and \mathbb{A}_{3}^{-} in this respect, are very similar to those of the Urdu word \mathbb{A}_{3} , wala, or the Persian words \mathbb{A}_{3} , \mathbb{A}_{3} , \mathbb{A}_{3} , \mathbb{A}_{3} , or the Persian words \mathbb{A}_{3} , $\mathbb{A$

5. Another common affix of a similar nature annexed to nounsubstantives is \(\sigma \overline{\Pi} \sigma', \) or \(\sigma \overline{\Pi} \) Maker, Manufacturer, etc. Ex.:—

Boot-maker

নিম্নির্রান

Parting

Carpenter

বাহাম্মর্রান

Goldsmith

Silversmith

ALশ্রেরান

Coppersmith

6. Abstract Nouns.

In the Colloquial these are seldom used, resort being generally had to an adjective phrase. Thus, instead of saying 577757757757

In Literary Tibetan abstract nouns are formed by adding 35° NYI', to the adjective in its full form, that is, not the mere root, but the root plus one of the indicative particles. Ex.:—

ম্ব্র' Easy, but ম্ব্র'ন্ট্র' Easiness, facility.

স্ব্রান্ত Difficult, but স্ব্রান্তর্গ Difficulty.

ম্ব্রান্তর্গ Free, but ম্ব্রান্তর্গ Freedom.

ম্ব্রান্তর্গ Young, but নান্ত্র'ন্ট্র' Youth.

ম্ব্রান্তর্গ Black, but র্নান্তর্গ Blackness.

ম্ব্রান্তর্গ Mad, but মুর্বান্তর্গ Madness, Lunacy.
ম্ব্রান্তর্গ Tedious, but মুর্বান্তর্গ Tedium.

B.—Inflexion.

The Tibetan Noun-Substantive is inflected in relation to:

1.—Gender.

The names of all males, females and inanimate objects are naturally

masculine, feminine, and common respectively, e.g., 회 Man (m.);

Nouns ending in \mathfrak{A} or \mathfrak{A} or \mathfrak{A} or \mathfrak{A} or with \mathfrak{A} or \mathfrak{A} prefixed or affixed, are generally (in the last two cases always) masculine. Ex.:—

지고 Pupil or novice in a monastery.

회사가 King, Regent, Temporal Ruler, Rajah.

국건 or 전투 Horse.

택기전 or 전체가 Hog.

전기전 Bull.

캠피워지 Bull-yak.

र्भें 5 Stallion.

यें यमा Boar.

STY Father.

ড়াইনি This old chap; I myself.

শূর্র Official chief.

ਲੱਜੋਂ Grandson.

But sometimes nouns in \mathfrak{I} or \mathfrak{I} or \mathfrak{I} are common.

Ex.:—
되장시간

당해시간

중시간

Reloved, Sweetheart,
Lover.

중시간

중시간

Rasket.

FAT Patch.

त्नुभय Traveller.

महादा Secret.

मॉर्भेन दें Servant.

দ্র'ন Liquid.

חים Leather.

ਤੋਂ Bitter buck-wheat.

Nouns with A affixed, or with A affixed or prefixed are generally feminine. Ex.:—

र्ते अ Mare.

With Mother.

পুম'5'শ' Maidservant.

ध्वासे Tigress.

মু'র্ন্ন Daughter, girl.

周知 | Bitch

ਲੱਝੋਂ Niece.

But 51' and 51' do not always denote the feminine gender. Ex.:-

ম'ন Leaf.

মৃহ্'ম' Lotus.

শাব্দান্তা Beam of wood.

মুব্'ঝ' Bean.

ইন্টা Breeches, pants.

बुर्झ Spoon.

८६मा अ Shovel, spade.

र्मेमाः Ant.

মিচ্ছু ম' Hawk, kite.

हेर् हों Sport, game, play.

माञ्च Chūmbi.

मानाहार Friend.

इमेंद्रिंस Evening.

Fair Music, cymbals.

सूर् में Fun.

श्चानिहास Grouse.

म्बिम् सें Hedgehog.

মুমার্ম Knee.

Masculine nouns may be turned into feminine nouns by substituting a feminine affix for a masculine one. Ex.:—

및'지기' A man of Lhasa.

র্ স্থান্থ An Indian.

75'7' A Tibetan.

मुज्नाय or मुःभे A Chinaman.

प्रवास A Nepāli.

মু'ম'র A woman of Lhasa.

मुन्दर्भे A woman of India.

নিই মি A woman of Tibet.

मुँज्ना में or मुँ में A woman of China.

ସମ୍ଭ A Nepāli woman.

2.—NUMBER

- (a) There are several signs in Tibetan denoting the plural number, e.g.—
- T'so. This is the sign commonly used now in the Colloquial with any kind of noun or adjective.
- (b) 55% NAM. This is Literary, and is seldom if ever heard in the Colloquial. It is largely used, for instance, in the Tibetan translation of the New Testament. 55°4° is used when

things or persons are referred to separately from others, e.g. 다듬다고 We five.

- (c) 취 ĎA'. This is an elegant substitute for 첫째시
- (d) শ্রন্ Cha'. Another book term. Used also in Sikhim and Būtān with personal pronouns, e.g. মান্তব্য We, etc.
- (e) No plural sign at all need be used when, from the context, it is clear that the plural number is implied. In such cases the noun remains in the singular number. Ex.:—

মুসমনুসমান্ত্র্মান্ত্

- (f) When, however, the plural sign is expressly used, it, and not the noun, nor the adjective, if any, takes the case-sign. Ex.:—
 ইম্মান্মান্ত্রিমান্
- (g) When expressly used, the plural sign comes after the noun if there is no adjective and no article, definite or indefinite. Ex.:—

नुषानुन् भेर्से अमें भेर महिंद आयत रेत्। Men were deceivers ever.

(h) When there is only an adjective after the noun, the plural sign is annexed to the adjective, not to the noun. Ex.:—

มิ. กุละ นั่ง J Good men.

(i) If, however, the adjective be used as an attribute predicated of the noun, then the plural sign is annexed to the noun, not to the adjective. Ex.:—

भेक प्रश्र में मेर् | The men are good.

(k) If the noun be distinguished by an article, or distinguished by an article and also qualified by an adjective, the plural sign is annexed to the article.

Ex.:-

से दिने कें। The or these men.

মইর The or those men.

মানার বিদ্যালয় The or these good men.

ਸ਼ੈ-ਸਭਵ-ਸੌ-ਤੇ-ਲੈ। The or those good men.

भेरेक नाम Those men are good.

3.—CASE.

By way of supplementing what has already been said on this subject in § 25, examples are now given of the Declension of Nouns ending in (1) a vowel, (2) final consonants \mathfrak{P} or \mathfrak{T} ; \mathfrak{T} or \mathfrak{T} ; and \mathfrak{T} , \mathfrak{T} , or \mathfrak{A} !

The particular postpositions given are, of course, only examples out of many that might be used.

I .- Noun ending in a Vowel.

(i) Singular.

and Month, or Moon.

Nom.) Voc. } Acc. } 결크 Month. Gen. 클크리 or 되번 Of month. Agent. 클크리 or 되번지 By month.

Dat. Francisco To month, or moon.

Loc. 355 On moon.

Per. 374 In or during month.

Mod. इत्रेनिक्नीक On account of moon or month.

Abl. = Than month or moon.

Term. สูงสุริสุรรุ Until month: as far as moon.

PLURAL.

নুসর্ক Months, Moons.

Mod. हुन र्रे दे नेन् मुझ On account of moons or months.

Abl. ব্রু'ব'র্ক্ক'মেষ্' Than months or moons.

Term. జైఇజేష్షాన్ Until months: as far as moons.

(ii) Similar with Definite Article.

SINGULAR.

ই স Sun or Day.

Nom. कें सप्तरे Voc. The sun or the day. Acc. कें सादरेंदे Of the sun or day. Gen. कें सप्तरेश By the sun or day. Agent. कें सप्तरें ता Dat. To the sun or day. केसादरेव Loc. On the sun. केलादरेव Per. During the day. कें सन्दर्भन Mod. With the sun or day. कें सात्री पर्या Abl. Than the sun or day.

के.श.उर्देर.सुनाशामः

Towards the sun.

Term.

N.B.—In Colloquial the Definite Article is as a matter of fact seldom used.

PLURAL.

ক্টিমান্দ্রই The suns or days.

| $\left. egin{array}{l} \operatorname{Nom.} \\ \operatorname{Voc.} \\ \operatorname{Acc.} \end{array} \right\}$ | ঈষ্মন্ বিক্ত | The suns or days. |
|--|---------------------------|------------------------|
| Gen. | केंसदरें हैं दे | Of the suns or days. |
| Agent. | क्रेसप् | By the suns or days. |
| Dat. | केंसदि कें | To the suns or days. |
| Loc. | केसप्रेकें | On the suns or days. |
| Per. | ঈ শব্দীর্ক্তিম | In or during the days. |
| Mod. | के समिर के र | With the suns or days. |
| Abl. | ঈ য়৻ঀ৾৾৾ঀ৾৾য়৾ঀয় | Than the suns or days. |
| Term. | केसापरीक्षित्र | From the suns or days. |

(iii)—Similar with Indefinite Article.

र्नोद्र'य'विमा A monastery.

| | 1 19 7 (1 1 21 monatory. | | |
|----------------------|--------------------------|-------------------|--|
| Nom. Voc. Acc. | न र्नेनियः विमाः | A monastery. | |
| Gen. | न्में इ.स. हिमा मी | Of a monastery. | |
| Agent. | न्नोंद्रयः लेगाः मीसः | By a monastery. | |
| Dat. | न्म्रेन्यः लेमाः सः | To a monastery. | |
| Loc. | र्नोद्गःयः हिमा त्यः | In a monastery. | |
| Per. | (Not used). | (Not used). | |
| Mod. | न्नेंब्रमः लेगान्यः | With a monastery. | |
| Abl. | न्त्रीत यालेगा सस | Than a monastery. | |
| | | | |

Term.

N.B.—In conversation ইনা, বিনা, and বিনা, in this sense is usually dropped in all cases except the Nominative, or Agentive.

(iv)—Similar with a higher Numeral.

| Nom. Voc. Acc. | <i>चॅ ७</i> नर्नुन | Seven angels. |
|----------------------|--------------------|------------------|
| Gen. | ই পূস্বসূত্ৰ শূ | Of seven angels. |
| Agent. | ই গ্ৰন্থ ক্ৰীম | By seven angels. |
| Dat. | विष्ठान्त्रायः | To seven angels. |
| | etc., et | ie. |

(v)—The same with a Definite Particle.

| Voc. Acc. | क्षेत्रमनुबुध | The seven angels. | |
|-----------|------------------|----------------------|--|
| Gen. | र्थे अन्दर्विते | Of the seven angels. | |
| Agent. | क्षेत्रचनुबन्धः | By the seven angels. | |
| Dat. | विष्ठ यतुक् या भ | To the seven angels. | |
| | etc., etc. | | |

(vi) The same in the Singular with Cardinal.

| Nom. Voc. Acc. | बॅरिंश वर्तु इस | The seventh angel. | |
|----------------------|---------------------|-----------------------|--|
| Gen. | ब्रॅं ३ मर्नु ४ मदे | Of the seventh angel. | |
| Agent. | बॅक्'यर्बेब'तश | By the seventh angel. | |
| Dat. | वें ३ वर्ष चया | To the seventh angel | |
| | 9 | etc. | |

(vii) Similar with Definite Article.

| Nom. Voc. Acc. | } ॲ॰५८चेन्दिः | The first angel. |
|----------------------|------------------|---------------------|
| Acc. | J Z | |
| Gen. | 4375 479 4 | Oj the first angel. |

र्थे ३ ५८ ये तिर्श Agent. By the first angel. र्थे ३ ५८ चे ल Dat. To the first angel. etc.

(viii) When, as is sometimes the case, the adjective precedes the noun, the former must be put in the genitive case, and the case-sign must be attached to the noun, or to the definite or indefinite article, if any, or to the plural sign, if any. Ex.:-

लमाज्य व जेर हरश Good behaviour. भना सं दे हो द स्ट्राक्स From good behaviour. भना रा ते ने नुरुष्ट्र प्रतिश By this good behaviour. लमार्चे दे त्यक्षामा विमानीका By a good deed. लचा हो है 'यस गार्के था To good deeds. यमार्गे वे तस्य गारे हैं तर To those good deeds.

II.—Noun ending in A, or C'

ম্বা Sheep. Nom. Voc. सुमा Sheep. Acc. शमामी. Gen. Of the sheep. अमा मोद्याः Agent. By the sheep. Dat. श्रमाताः To the sheep. etc., etc. 'dr. Tree. Nom. Voc. Tree. Acc. निद्भी Of the tree. Gen.

निद्मीश By the tree. ACA To the tree.

etc.

Agent.

Dat.

III.—Noun ending in 5, 5 or N

ন্দ্ৰ Tibet ; ঠ্ম Delegate ; ক্রম Costume.

Declined like any other noun, save that the genitive sign is $\widehat{\mathbb{J}}^*$ and the agentive sign is $\widehat{\mathbb{J}}^{\mathbb{N}}$

IV.—Noun ending in 5, 8, 5 or 21

हैं समिन Buyer; झुझ Boot; मूँट हिंद City; हें राज Coal.

Declined like any other noun, save that the genitive sign is $\frac{1}{2}$, and the agentive sign is $\frac{1}{2}$. It must be remembered, however, that in Colloquial it is allowable to pronounce all these signs $\frac{1}{2}$ and $\frac{1}{2}$

§ 30.—THE ADJECTIVE.

I .- Form and Place.

(i) There is little or no structural difference between the noun and the adjective. In fact, the latter may, for the most part, be regarded merely as a noun performing qualifying functions with respect to some other noun or verbal substantive.

As a rule the adjective follows the noun, and then it is the adjective and not the noun which takes the case-sign. If the adjective is distinguished by a following article, definite or indefinite, or a demonstrative pronoun, it is the article or the pronoun and not the adjective which takes the case-sign. So, the adjective, and not the noun, takes the sign of the plural, if there is no article or demonstrative pronoun. If there is, the article or pronoun takes the sign.

If, as is sometimes the case, the adjective precedes the noun, the adjective is put in the genitive case, and the case-sign is annexed to the noun, or to the article, if any, or to the plural sign, if any.

EXAMPLES :-

ब्रिंभेज्याचित्राहि है दिण्या (ब्रिया) That black cat saw a white mouse.

सर्वेट दुन्।

विक्री'द्रमाचिक्ष'हैं हैं हैं हैं देर या देता

The black cat has caught the mouse.

माञ्चमान्गानः सं कें त्र नेता सं सान्। माञ्चमानगानः सं ति ने कें इं के के सं ने ने। माञ्चना माञ्चन सहिता सं नित्र मान्य ति ने कें सा ने ने माञ्चन सहिता सानि स्थाना स्थान माञ्चन माञ्चन सहिता माञ्चन सहिता माञ्चन सहिता माञ्चन स्थान स्था

White leopards are uncommon.

These white leopards are valuable.

These beautiful white beasts of prey kill other wild animals.

Those crimson clouds are very beautiful.

(ii) A very common practice in Colloquial is to turn what we would call a relative clause into an adjectival phrase. Ex.:—

म्बर्स्स्याम्बर्सः हो। सम्बर्धः सम्बर्धः हो।

The man who killed the wolf.

Literally, the wolf-killing man.

भ्राप्तरम्भानरम्भः भ्राप्तरम् । or भ्राप्तरम् ।

The wolf that killed the man.

(iii) The idiomatic use of this affix হাসেই is undoubtedly most difficult to understand, for Colloquially it may express the passive as well as the active voice. For instance, হামেই ইন্মিই ইন্মিই signifies, not only The man who kills or killed, but also the man who was or has been killed. Probably the difficulty arose with the alleged Colloquial custom of using the perfect root of most verbs even in the present tense. If only that custom were not in vogue, it would be possible to use present roots in present tenses, and perfect roots in past tenses, and confine the use of হামেই to the active voice, and use the past participle of the verb for the passive voice alone. Ex.:—

नार्शेन् आमन् मी से ने , or से मार्शेन

The man who kills.

मामन्द्री।

यसर्स्माम्बन्ती से दे , or से यसर्

The man who killed.

मामन्द्री।

नसर्यते भे दे, or भे नसर्यादे।

The man who was killed.

This can be done, of course, even as things are; nevertheless it remains a fact that, in Colloquial, সমস্কান্ত্রী নি, and নি, and নি, মান্ত্রী নি, and না, মান্ত্রী না, মান্ত্রী না, and না, মান্ত্রী না, মান্ত্রী না, and না, মান্ত্রী ন

See § 31, IX, A, on the use of the different roots of the auxiliary verb $\Im 5$. To do, for the purpose of distinguishing the Active from the Passive Voice.

(iv) The Relative Idea is also frequently expressed by turning a participial clause into an adjectival phrase. Ex.:—

केर क्षेत्र मुज्ञ माद्र नुद्र नुद्र निर्मा A growing child (a child that is growing) will eat anything it gets.

ন্ধিষা (or Literary নিষ্কান) দুৰ্বি The man whom you sent yesterday is dead. Literally, The yesterday-by-you-sent man is dead.

The participle, being here an adjective, may also follow the noun. Thus:—

मिश्रदामुन् गुरेश से नन्दान ने भिश्रदा। The man, etc.

Now, let another adjective be inserted, thus :-

मिश्रद्धित् गुैश्राय5दायदे श्रीयबदायः दे वे संदा

The good man whom you sent yesterday is dead.

Or thus :-

The good man, etc.

रे-विश्रा

The negative is inserted thus:-

मिश्रामिंद् गुँशकायद्गायदे से यत्रा से दे के सिंद्य दिन्ता।

The good man whom you did not send yesterday is dead.

(v) Use of the Particles J, J, N, N, T, J,

If we desired to be very correct as regards the particles annexed to adjectival roots, we would use $\overline{\mathfrak{A}}$, or $\overline{\mathfrak{A}}$, with a masculine noun, and $\overline{\mathfrak{A}}$, with a feminine noun; $\overline{\mathfrak{A}}$, being more properly employed with the Indefinite Article, and $\overline{\mathfrak{A}}$, with the Definite Article, when masculine nouns are concerned; while $\overline{\mathfrak{A}}$, may be used with either the Indefinite or the Definite Article when the noun is feminine. In common parlance $\overline{\mathfrak{A}}$ is often pronounced pu.

But, as a matter of fact, these distinctions are not observed Colloquially, and a Tibetan would express himself thus:—

| मु नम सं नग | A black dog. | |
|-----------------------|--|--|
| कुंचें दुगार थें। | | |
| इच्चित्रार विदे। | The white hors | |
| डि.स.चनाराक्ना | A black bitch. | |
| र्ने देशदगर दे। |) | |
| र्केन्स-नगर-चिन्। | $\left. \left. ight. $ | |

However, there are many adjectives which, even in Colloquial, are seen in 4 and 5 without reference to gender. Ex.:—

| र्ह्येन-यः | Mad, insane. | र्हेन्यः | Wet. |
|---------------|---------------------|--------------------|-------------------|
| न ्यां | Necessary, needful. | ম'ব্দা'ন' | Wrong, incorrect. |
| चाश्चर.च. | New. | र्ष ् श. | All. |
| क्रे⊏या | Old. | <u>ব</u> ্লীু≰ন্ধ. | Ordinary, vulgar. |
| मबिंदे.त. | Young. | €श .श. | Sham. |

There are also one or two seen in $\widetilde{\mathbb{N}}$ without reference to gender. Ex.:—

In the Literary language the adjective, in its root form alone, is often seen immediately preceding the noun. Ex.:—

So, when the adjective has a particle and precedes the noun, Literary Tibetan follows the same rule as obtains in the Colloquial, of putting the adjective in the genitive case. Ex.:—

But even in the Colloquial it is allowable, for brevity's sake, to form adjectival expressions by placing before a noun an adjective minus its particle. Ex.:—

Instead of :-

(or क्षमां देश) भगमी रेर्।

So also:

ब्रेंब या वेंद्र खुया के बुका खुया किया देवा

Formerly Tibet was a secret (or hidden) country.

Instead of :-

स्वायते स्थापने स्थापना (or

Formerly Tibet, etc.

(vi) Adjectives are also sometimes formed from nouns and postpositions, the latter being put in the genitive case, and the whole expression made to precede the noun that it qualifies. Ex.:—

শ্বমান্ত্রী দ্রীদানী ব্রমনা মী বিশারী বিশারী থাকা মান

Some time ago a European soldier was living in Tibet.

८२म। इ.५.२मी.मीजाध्याप्तश्चरात्रश्चरा प्रस्तिमी.मीजाध्यश्चरात्रश्चरा

Some of the many great ancient empires are still remembered.

बिंसीयर्देशहें मी (or हें दे) हार्सेर यदमामानेर।

The cat has broken the stone jug.

प्रायदायादेवे or आमीवे खेटाव्यामी प्रायदायादेवामी बदाया होर्ने गी स्पर्

I live (or have a dwelling place) in an upper room of that house.

The adjectives to which attention is drawn in the foregoing illustrations are, in the first টুল্লামেন European; in the second, ফুর্ন্ন Ancient; in the third ইনি or ইবি Stone; and, in the fourth, ফুমেন্সাম্বা Upper.

(vii) Some adjectives consist merely of a primitive repeated. Ex.:—

ক্রন্'ক্রন্' Broken.

লুহ'লুহ' Concave.

লুহ'লুহ' Straight.

اَ الْهِ ال

リス・リス· Flat.

(viii) Others consist of two primitives, similar as regards their consonantal form, but with different vowels. Ex.:—

지리 기계 Soft, low.

[독리 [독리 : Promiscuous, disorderly.
제정도 대칭도 : Steep, rugged.

- 기계 기계 Weak, feeble.

기계 기계 Curved, crooked.

(ix) Or of a repeated dissyllable with a difference in the vowels. Ex.:—

(x) Or of two different dissyllables in juxtaposition. Ex.:—

TTT Raving.

(xi) Or of two different monosyllables in juxtaposition. Ex.:-

되다. Far, distant, remote.

독대대대 Measureless, immeasurable.

독대대대 Immense.

(xii) As to the formation of Abstract Nouns from adjectives, see § 29, A. 6.

(xiii) English adjectives ending in able and ible are usually rendered in Colloquial Tibetan by 35, NYAN, or ইন্ দে'o', or ইন্ইন্ দে'o', added to the root of the verb. Ex.:—

भारिद्यम् केनामार्थः or व्रम्केनाः Is this road passable?

क्रमाश्चात्रामाने स्ट्रमा का स्ट्रमा का स्ट्रमा

No, the road is not passable.

मृनाकुरदिन्न्यः केनान्त्र।

समार्थनुनाकुरिन्न्यः केनान्त्र।

समार्थनुनाकुरिन्न्यः केनान्त्रः स्ति।

समार्थनुनाकुरिन्न्यः केनान्त्रः स्ति।

समार्थनान्तिः केन्यः केन्यः स्तिन्ना।

समार्थनान्तिः केन्यः स्तिन्ना।

समार्थनान्तिः केन्यः स्तिन्ना।

समार्थनान्तिः केन्यः स्तिन्ना।

समार्थनान्तिः केन्यः स्तिन्नाः स्तिन्ना।

समार्थने केन्यः स्तिन्नाः स्तिन्ना।

समार्थने सकेन्यः स्तिन्यः स्तिन्ना।

समार्थने सकेन्यः स्तिन्यः सम्तिन्ना।

न्गिन सकेना ने गुन समिन भेन।

Is this stream fordable?

No, the stream is not fordable.

He is ready to go.

This tea is very drinkable.

That pastry is not eatable.

These goods are not saleable.

God is invisible.

God is knowable.

(xiv) The Literary equivalent of $\widetilde{\mathfrak{S}}$, or \mathfrak{Z} , is \mathfrak{Z} Rungway, or \mathfrak{Z} Rung. Ex.:—

त्रुन्सित्ने प्रदेशसासु उत्तर्से, or उत्तर

This spectacle is terrible, or calculated to terrify.

E ने त्रबुद ने उद्देश or उद्देश सन्ति। This tea is not drinkable, or fit to drink.

রমান্দ্রী রুদানী কার্ট্রা This food is not eatable, or fit to eat.

Sometimes, however, the supinal particle \S , \S , or \S , attached to the verbal root, is omitted, and the particle \S after \S is also dropped. Ex.:—

दुर्के पर्ने प्रहिमाश उदादि।

This sight is terrible.

हारीत्र श्रुदास्त्र प्रामी सारे**र** or **त्र**शुदासी

That tea is undrinkable.

35.4.351

बशाप्रे, बाद्धरामी शारेरे. or बाधादिरा

This food is uneatable.

4.351

(xv) Where a noun is qualified by two or more adjectives joined by the conjunction and, or or, the construction is as follows:—

श्चीं त्राध्यमा या प्राप्त (or क्रिंग या) श्चीं त्राध्यमा या (or क्रिंग या) श्चीं या

Good and bad (addled) eggs.

Three or four men.

(xvi) NEGATIVE ADJECTIVES corresponding to such as begin in English with Un, In, Il, Im, Ir, or Dis, or end in less, are not very much used, Tibetans preferring to use an affirmative adjective and to put the verb in the negative. Ex.:—

Instead of saying :-

मिं भे कें अ अस्य भेर सम्बन्दे ।

He is an irreligious man.

A Tibetan would prefer to say :-

मिंकी केंस सेमस उन्यारेत्।

He is not a religious man.

However, when such negative adjectives are employed, they are formed with the aid of the Colloquial negative expressions \Re , \Re , and \Re , and the Literary expressions \Re , \Re , \Re

Ex.:--

र्निश्चयास्त्र स्रीर्निश्चयाः स्रीर्निश्चयाः

 $\left\{ Unnecessary. \right.$

Innocuous.

ম'**মুন**'ন' ম'মুন'ন'

Impossible.

सुव.श्र.भटत.

Without fault.

| भेदिंशयः)_ | मङ्गेद मणुर सेर | , |
|---|-----------------|--|
| देश सेर् | श्रमुश्र-य | $\left. iggraph Disrespectful. ight.$ |
| शेंग्र श -द्रमाद सेंद्र Cheerless. | स्रान्ताया | Incorrect, wrong. |
| भैं मुं सेर् | ম'র্দ্দিম'ম' | Having no leisure. |
| म्प्रें मुं से र Immovable. | মন্ত্রীধানা | Unheard of. |
| 55 होर्ड Unbelieving. | মান্ত্ৰীক্ষমা | Immature, raw, callow. |
| אייי י | दॅंकंशेर | Immodest. |
| ह्रेंद्राहे सेंद्र Merciless. | व्यवन्त्रवासेन | Illiterate. |
| रे'न'सेर्' Hopeless. | बेंबाबर | |
| মন্ত্র'অম' Infinite. | भैभिषाया | Without faith. |
| र्माभा Immeasurable. | | |
| 5वुं सें5 । Headless, | जिश्र.चेया | Incorporeal. |
| মন্ত্রি Unsurmounted. | वर्रेर:ब्रथः | Passionless. |
| ब्रेंच होत्) | र्ह्मनाययः | Sinless. |
| ब्राह्म } Without riches. | দ্রিমশসীন্ | Lawless, Illicit. |

(xvii) Sometimes, in the Colloquial, the Active Participles $\widetilde{\mathsf{W}}_{\mathsf{5}}^{\mathsf{c}}\mathsf{5}^{\mathsf{c}}$ for inanimate objects, and $\widetilde{\mathsf{W}}_{\mathsf{5}}^{\mathsf{c}}\mathsf{5}^{\mathsf{c}}\mathsf{5}^{\mathsf{c}}$ for animate objects, meaning which is, or are, who is, or are, are used adjectivally. Ex.:—

मुः अन्देना उद्देश प्रिन्य निम्दे । That lama is a wily one. धुत्र दद्देश प्रिन्य निम्दे । This country is a fertile one.

(xviii) In Literary Tibetan adjectives are frequently formed by adding to a noun, or to its root, or to a whole phrase, one of the expressions 35 Chan, 25 Dan, 25 Dan-Chan, 55 Chan, 5

Ex.:-

| ন্ত্ৰ'তৰ' | Intelligent, Sagacious. |
|--------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| र्देर् उद | Punctilious, moderate. |
| यव खर | Beneficial, useful. |
| নানাশ-তব্ | Renowned, famous |
| दे त खत | Costly, expensive. |
| वर्नेन स्थ | Passionate, amorous. |
| न्नाः स्व | $Rocky_{ullet}$ |
| न्माद ख्र | Blissful, joyous. |
| ॲव-५वन्य-८ | Talented, literate, accomplished. |
| र्नेष व्यन | Intelligent. |
| बेर-ह्याउन | Wealthy, opulent. |
| चान्त्र-द्वव-द्वव- | Full of moisture. |
| नीचाश.र्जव.क्य. | Full of energy. |
| ইুদা'নতম' | Sinful. |
| মাদ্রমান্ত্র মাক্রবান্থর | A perfectly accomplished scholar. |
| मिर्दिर सर्केर से छन | Having a pretty face. |
| मिकी श्रुमाया उन | Having an ugly mouth. |

ক্তা is also said to be sometimes used thus:—
নুমান ইন্মান বিশ্বিমান instead of নুমান মান্ত্রিমান কিন্মান কিন্মান কিন্মান কিন্মান would seem to be the more correct. See, however, § 31, V, (b).

Instead of constructing an adjective out of the root, the particle, and the affix 55, resort is often had to the root alone plus the affix 5 J'A, or ChA. Ex.:—

From 주피어'되장, may be formed 주피어' (Cheerful.)
From 여러 기장, may be formed 여러 기장, Wery learned.

II.—Augmenting of adjectives.

This can be done in several ways: -

(a) By simply repeating the adjective, either in the shape of the primitive root, or of the root with the particle. Ex.:—

| गुनि गुनि | Very crooked. |
|--------------------|----------------------------|
| भैमाश भैमाश | Very silly. |
| ૹૄૻ ઽૻૹૄૻઽ | Very sour. |
| ארצ.ארצ. | Very sweet. |
| वर्डम्।यावर्डम्।या | Very dirty. |
| मार्वट समार्वट स | Very clean. |
| श्रच्यंश्रच | Very early in the morning. |
| बुच बुच | Very late. |

(b) By repeating the adjective, in any of its forms, with WT YANG, inserted between them. In the Colloquial WT becomes RT' ANG, after consonants other than T, T, T, and N | Ex.:—

মাইরা WE'রাইরা | Very beautiful.
মুর্নি WE'র্ম্বরা | Very thick.

অব-চব-মেন্ডব্য | Very learned.

 $\mathfrak{A} \Gamma$ also becomes $\mathfrak{A} \Gamma$ after vowels, both in the Literary language and in Colloquial. Ex.:—

बुष्टें प्रत्राक्षेत्र। Very heavy (Lit.). আম্মান্ত্রামান Very light (Coll.). In the Literary language WT becomes JT KYANG, after final consonants J, J, and N Ex.:—

(c) By use of the affix \mathfrak{F} Ch'E signifying emphasis generally. Ex.:—

ই্বারিক Extremely sinful:
নামান কৈ Exceedingly brilliant.
নিব্বারিক Very precious.

The above, however, is more Literary than Colloquial. In the Colloquial & T, added to the root, is more common, but it is often used merely to form the adjective, and not so much to augment its force. Ex.:—

हं के दे चें Precious.

ते दे के दे चें Brilliant.

के चें चें Intellectual.

के मा के दे चें Sinful.

(d) By inserting সৃত্ত Very, immediately before the adjective, or by adding স্থাইন Very, to the adjectival root:—

र्नेर्भूर ज्ञार प्रभावना स्थिति | Tibetan is very difficult.
राष्ट्र मानुसार्क च्रमा केर्र नेर्। The weather just now is very hot.

Certain other adverbs may be inserted in the same way when the sentence is a negative one. Ex.:—

95.42.5.5.5.5.5.5. This is quite (or absolutely improper. मिं स बहा द मीमा दा (or द मीमा मी) He is not right at all. शिष्ट्रम्। सरकारे सावशार्देश वशासरित।

That statement is not at all true.

III.—THE COMPARATIVE DEGREE.

(a) To express this Tibetans make use of the postpositions (X) LX, in the Colloquial, and 여자 or 직자 PA (직장 WA, after vowels, or final T' or A') in Literature, signifying Than, or More than, but they so manipulate the sentence as to place first the object with which the subject is being compared, then the postposition, next the subject, then the adjective in its positive degree, and lastly the verb. Ex.:-

प्रायाने व्यक्ष वर्ते अंग्रे में नेत्र

This house is higher than that one. Literally, Than that house this high is.

유도자 골드자 (pronounced Den-jong)

Tibet is colder than Sikhim.

यश (or पश) येर भूभ मार से भेरा

तह्नाहेब यायश केंबा शेमश ख्याद्मात 7.351

A religious man is happier than a worldling.

इ. क्रांशामव क्रें. पश वट ट्रेंब उब क्रें दमाव मी'रेर।

Philosophers are happier than ritualists.

यामन रा.कू. प्रशासिंग कुन. ता.कू. रचाट. ता. **५**5्मा।

Ascetics (meditators) are happier than professors.

(b) When there is no expressed object with which to compare the subject, an object may be supplied by means of at This or THAT. Ex.:-

दिन्यश्चार्य दिन्दाय हिन्। A higher house than this. देन्यश्चार्मिश्चादिन्द्वन। A fleeter horse than that. दिन्यश्चार्यहिन्। A counsel exceeding this.

(c) In the Colloquial the comparative degree of certain common adjectives has a special form. For instance, the comparative of আন্ত্ৰা Good, is অন্ত্ৰা Better; of আন্ত্ৰা Much, it is আন্ত্ৰা More; of ইন্ট্ৰা Thick, it is মুন্তা Thicker; of ইন্ট্ৰা Large, big, great, it is ইন্ট্ৰা Larger, bigger, greater. Even with them the same construction in বাংশ is employed. Ex.:—

শ্রম্মের শ্রমের শ্রম্মের শ্রমের শ্রম্মের শ্রম্মের শ্রম্মের শ্রম্মের শ্রমের শ্রম্মের শ্রমের শ্রমের শ্রম্মের শ্রমের শ্র

(d) The particle belonging to an adjective is sometimes vulgarly conjugated, i.e. transmuted into \mathfrak{A} , \mathfrak{A} , or \mathfrak{A} , according to the rule with reference to the last letter of the root. It is better, however, to avoid this. Ex.:—

দ্ধী'ব্যাবিশ্ব মাইম'মি'মিব may This woman is indeed pretty.

be rendered মাইম'দ্বী'মিব।

ক্রমেন্সিমান্সিমান্স may be This wine is not good. rendered অন্নীমান্সিমান্স।

PE'ম'ই'মহা'ন্ই'ইর'মহ' may be This house is larger than that one.
rendered ই'ম্বাইবৃ

But not where $\widetilde{\mathsf{W}}_{\mathsf{5}}^{\mathsf{T}}\mathsf{V}^{\mathsf{T}}$, etc., has the sense of To have. Ex.:—

রাই অধ্যর ই শে নুর্বাধার । বুর্বা not প্রায়ধারী বুর্বা।

This man has wiser friends than that one.

IV.—THE SUPERLATIVE DEGREE.

(a) To express this a universal comparison is resorted to, the subject being placed, at option, either before or after the expression used for the universal comparison. This latter may take numerous forms such as:—

RESIDENT ব্রমধাত্র, দেখা Than all. 괴트'되'어치. 묏다.너.너쇠. শৃব্'শৃষ্' (Literary) क्ट्रमंद्रे वट वहा वस्रकाउर गु.वट.वस माट.मार्च.बट.बडा. From among all. 됐다. 보상, 역단, 역회. শ্ব-দ্যীব্দৰ্শ (Literary) क्राम्ये न्योपान्य রমধাত্রণী,ব্রীপার্ধা माटमादे नगुत्रका From among all. स्रामित्र न्ग्रेयक्रा শূৰ্নী বৃত্তীন ৰ্ম (Literary)

Ex.:-

রামান্বিম্বরাত্তর নেরামান্রমানর বি ।

or:

ব্রম্বাত্তর নেরা ব্রামান্বরামানর বি ।

That lama is the most learned (of all).

म्रामायकान्त्रीम्रम्याः नेत्।

This is the swiftest horse.

श्चन्यम् कंटः स्रदे 'न्गुेश्यन्सः हे प्रदे 'रेन' बटः के मः रेन or के मी रेन (or के ज़िंस रेन)।

This stone is the most valuable of all well secured things.

रेक् चें के or बु मदे मिसस क्षर मिदे रणुषा क्रामिशेर कें इं केंक् चें (or केंमी) रेर्।

Gold is the most precious of all metals (meltable things).

N.B.—Note that えるずず in its conjugated form becomes ま

(b) Another equally common method of expressing the superlative degree is to affix স্থা Shō to the root of the adjective. The order in which the sentence is constructed does not much matter, and even the use of মান (in Literature মান, মান, or মান) is optional. Ex.:—

इ.सर्ने.सर्नेच्याः ग्रेंश रेर्।

This horse is the fleetest.

रेक्ट्रिकेरेक्ट्रक्स (or त्र्णिसक्स)

Gold is the dearest of metals.

महोर-रेष-घट-के-विहा-रेर्।

If the speaker likes he may insert ই THE, after বৃষ, thus:—
5'বই'মন্মান্ম'ব্য'ই'ই \
This horse is the fleetest.

र्नेष्ठिः इके विष (दे) देता

This stone is the most valuable.

N.B. $\rightarrow \tilde{A}$ $\rightarrow \tilde{A}$, like many other words in MS., is often abbreviated into \tilde{A} \tilde{A} \tilde{A}

झ्रसम्बद्धाः विदार्जातः प्रवित्तः विदार्भः विदार्भः विदार्भः विदार्भः विदार्भः विदार्भः विदार्भः विदार्भः विदार

Lhasa is the most transcendent of cities.

N.B.— সুমান্ত is often abbreviated into প্রত, and সুমান্ত into সুমান্ত into সুমান্ত into সুমান্ত into সুমান্ত ভাষা স্থান স্থা

(c) Yet another expression used to indicate the superlative idea is FIET CH'O', signifying The best, The most, etc. It is a Literary word, and only rarely comes into the Colloquial. It may be either prefixed or affixed to the word that it qualifies, and when prefixed should be put in the genitive case. Ex.:—

| मळेंग्मी नन्म। | The chief noble or lord. |
|---------------------|---|
| मर्केमामि। | The chief mother: the goddess Dolma. |
| अञ्चाना क्षेत्रामा | The principal woman in a family. |
| अर्केन् ने अर्केन्। | The best of the best. |

In Literary Tibetan the substantive is put in the genitive case when হার্ক্স is affixed. Ex.:—

| मनदार्य दे सर्द्धम्। | The best among the good or noble. | |
|-----------------------------|---|--|
| বুমান্দ্রীমার্ক্রিন। | The holiest $ullet$ | |
| न्गेंब्र-यद्ये-अर्केन्। | The Chief of Rarities; the rarest Being or Object; the Supreme Being. | |
| प्यम्बर्गस्यः सर्वे सर्वे । | The sublimest, most excellent. | |
| भेदे सर्हेन। | The best or greatest of men. | |
| भामश्रायदे अर्क्नेन स् | The wisest or most learned. | |

In the Colloquial AST, if used at all, is sometimes prefixed and sometimes affixed, but neither it nor the substantive is put in the genitive case. Ex.:—

षष्ट्रमार्श्विदः।

The Chief Protector.

न्गेंब सर्वेमा

Anything excellent of its kind; also an abbreviation of

यदे सकेंग।

सर्देन। दमाद।

The highest joy, rapture, bliss.

प्यम्बरासर्जेम।

The noblest, sublimest.

र्ने मर्देग।

The most excellent taste, delicious.

श्रामश्रामळेंगार्द्ध।

The wisest, most learned.

मालुद्र सर्केमा केन दी।

The very utmost attention.

भी ती अपूर्या. or भी अपूर्या।

The Chief of Beings, Buddha.

शैसर्केना हिंद।

Thou best of men!

মঠন is also used thus in Literary Tibetan:—

सळेग्'द्रम्'ब्रुक्ट्रा

Nobles and commonalty.

सर्द्रमान्द्रस्थाय।

The great and the vulgar.

मर्केमान्सन्।

Great and small.

निवन्त्र सर्देन।

The very excellent or superior.

V.—OTHER METHODS OF COMPARISON.

The Tibetan rendering of English phrases constructed with As..as, may be illustrated thus:—

द्यारी वश्चामाद स्राद्य हिना (or नारी स्राद्य हिना, or नाद हिन्द हेमा, or नाद हि हिना, or नारी हिन्दी) नावद रिनासा

Please give me as much (or many) of that as possible.

or :—

हिंद्-णुक्ष-दायादे-विकासादे-स्विक्टा । त्रमान्द्र-साक्ष-स्वाक्ष-साक्ष-मुक्टा ।

Please give, etc.

or :--

मायट.ऱ्यांश.चायट. । मायट.ऱ्यांश.चायट. व

Please give, etc.

हिंद्रसमी विद्या मुना (or मुनात्म, or वद्रात्) व्यद्रमा अद्यक्ष।

Will you come as far as to yonder house?

यसःगायदेःसःमी।मदःसःद्मामार्जःलेमाः यःदर्मोःमीःदद्म।

This road goes about as far as to that house.

यन्त्री विष्टार्श्वेट सर्वे रे स्प्रेन्य र्वसन्त्रमाः रूप्त्रेन्द्र सर्वे स्पर्ट स्पर्ट स्वा As high as that tree-trunk is (may be) this one also is.

ম্বান্ত্র স্থানির বার্লির (or ব্রান্ত্রির) or ব্রাহাণি) স্বিশ্বান্ত্র স্থানির স্থানির As far as I know, that is so: Literary, If it be according to the knowledge I possess, it is just like that.

विन्यदशस्य वना (or स्वयमानुः, or सम्बन्धः or सम्बन्धः) दशस्य सम्बन्धः

As soon as he rose I fired.

दत्रे द्ये कः (दे) चित्र कुष्टा कर्दाः अनाक्ष क्रिया महिना मी दे ।

My book is as good as yours:
Literally, My book is equally
good-bad with yours.

§ 31.—THE PRONOUN.

I -PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

(a) I.

F:

Commonest forms in Colloquial.

Expressive of humility. Chiefly used in Tsang.

Like Persian with Bandeh.

ETTT:

Emphatic forms.

This old fellow or chap. Used by the speaker in reference to himself, but only in a comic way.

The following are Book-terms:

The following are Colloquially used by the Kyrong-pas, or Nipāl Frontier Tibetans :—

F5.45. Pronounced almost like W.45. I myself.
We ourselves

(b) Thou.

(b) Thou.

(c) Common Colloquial forms.

The genitive of $\widetilde{\mathbb{G}}_{5}$ is either $\widetilde{\mathbb{G}}_{5}$ $\widetilde{\mathbb{G}}_{5}$ or $\widetilde{\mathbb{G}}_{5}$ $\widetilde{\mathbb{G}}_{5}$ Thy, Thine: and the Agentive is either $\widetilde{\mathbb{G}}_{5}$ $\widetilde{\mathbb{G}}_{5}$ or $\widetilde{\mathbb{G}}_{5}$ $\widetilde{\mathbb{G}}_{5}$ By thee.

Other Literary forms.

(c) HE, or SHE.

(c) HE, or SHE.

(c) Common Colloquial forms.

The genitive of 百 is either 百克, or 百克克 His, and the agentive is either 百克, or 百克利

Polite forms, Literary and Colloquial.

- স্থিত বিশ্ব Honorific form, Literary and Colloquial.

百年 百年 百多。

Literary forms.

Other forms for SHE :-

The genitive of $\widetilde{\mathcal{H}}$ is either $\widetilde{\mathcal{H}}$ or $\widetilde{\mathcal{H}}$, and the Agentive is either $\widetilde{\mathcal{H}}$ or $\widetilde{\mathcal{H}}$

(d) IT.

There is no special term for this pronoun. It is often not rendered at all. Ex.:—

If used at all it is generally rendered by $\overline{\zeta}$, or $\overline{\zeta}$ $\overline{\zeta}$. Ex.:— $\overline{\zeta}$ $\overline{$

Usually Pronouns are not repeated in ordinary conversation after the first reference.

(e) REFLEXIVES.

Self, One's self, is the commonest expression, both in the Colloquial and in Book-language. Other Book-terms with the same meaning are: — \(\bar{75}\bar{7}, \bar{35}, \bar{35}, \alpha \bar{35}\bar{1}, \alpha \bar{35}\bar{1}

II.—DECLENSION OF PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

This follows the same rules as apply in the case of Substantives. Ex.:—

| Singular. | Plural. |
|---|----------------------------|
| $ \begin{pmatrix} \text{Nom.} \\ \text{Voc.} \\ \text{Acc.} \end{pmatrix} $ | rã We. |
| Gen. $\zeta \hat{\mathbf{A}}$ Of me. | rīkā Of us. |
| Agent. SN By me. | ్చేళు By us. |
| Dat. Car To me. | దావేణ To us. |
| Loc. 55 On me. | TFF On us |
| Per | |
| Mod. 555 Against me. | గౌశ్వారా Against us. |
| Abl. মেন্স Than me. | ट र्के अश Than us. |
| Term. \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ | टर्स दे सुनाशय Towards us. |
| | নের্ক বৃষ্ণ From us. |
| Nom. Voc. Acc. } 5.55 I. | ロスで着 We. |
| Gen. েম্মেন্ Of me. | రావరోష్ Of us. |
| Agent. ८:५८ में हा By me. | EREĞN By us. |
| Dat. STAT To me. | にちに番ね To us. |
| | |

And so forth.

| Nom. Voc. Acc. | $\widetilde{\mathfrak{h}}$ $\widetilde{\mathfrak{h}}$ $Thou.$ | jj√ a € | You. | |
|----------------|---|----------------|----------------|--|
| Gen. | HTTD Of thee, Thy. | हिंद के दे | Of you, yours. | |
| Agent. | ট্রিন্'ল্টীম' By thee. | हिंदि कूल | By you. | |
| Or:— | | | | |
| Gen. | ট্রিইইই Of thee, Thy. | ট্রিন্র্রের | Of you, yours. | |
| Agent | ট্রি ইশ By thee. | हिंद्र देश | By you. | |
| | BT-Thou, is declined | l like 5.44. | <i>I</i> , | |

Nom. Voc.
$$Acc.$$
 \overrightarrow{F} \overrightarrow{F} $He.$ \overrightarrow{F} \overrightarrow{E} \overrightarrow{F} \overrightarrow{F}

And so forth.

AL' He, is declined like L'AL' I.

She, is declined like T He.

শ্ব This humble one, has for genitive নী, and for Agentive নীমা

All those ending in \Box' , \Box' , \Box' , \Box' , and \Box' are declined like \Box' I.

Those ending in 5 are declined like 75 Thou, save as regards the forms in 3

N.B.—Plural Nouns do not take the plural sign \mathfrak{F} if from the context it is clear that plurality is intended [See § 29 B, 2 (e)], but plural Pronouns always take the sign, except when they are qualified by Numeral Adjectives.

EXAMPLE:--

다고역 We four. 다고다 We five.

III. THE REFLEXIVE PRONOUN.

the following are examples of KC Self, One's self, used reflexively:—

८श.४८:५मो शेसश केंद्र टॅर-टॅर-पेश द र्गोद सकेंमा भारतिहा मी भेदा

दशः द्रोंकि सर्केन्। त्यः द्रनोः श्रीस्रशः क्रेक्ट्रेनः राष्ट्रितः सर्केन्। त्यः द्रनोः श्रीस्रशः क्रेक्ट्रेनः

गुःश्चरः दः वेशः वेम।

भै'यसर्'सम्बद्धार्रस्रर्'यसर्'यर्

हिन् रेशन्द्वा । or भेन्निमा

र्देब:दे:रदावशाद्भरा।

हुरा । हिश्र-इश्वास्त्री-इट.ची-झुँचीश्वाप्तापंत्रीये.

श्रेमसक्त (or र्ट्स य) महिमाय रूट

श्र.मिष्यत्त्राक्ष्यः स्ट्राक्ष्यः स्थान्त्रः श्र.मिष्यत्त्राक्ष्यः स्थान्त्रः

ट.वी.रट.यहोब.वश्रास.चैट.।

If I know myself spiritually I shall see God.

If I see God spiritually I shall know myself.

Man, know thyself.

The murderer has killed himself.

Did you keep the money for yourself?

The idea originated from myself.

The dog pulled the bone towards itself.

The soul alone really knows itself.

Other men are ourselves incarnate under other conditions.

He that speaketh of (from) himself, seeketh his own glory (John vii, 18).

I am not come of myself (John vii. 28)

Or better :-

प्तर्भेता नासेन।

I am not, etc.

दशक्षक्षक्षक्षक्षक्षक्षक्षक्षक्षक्षक्ष

I can of mine own self do nothing (John v. 30).

Or better :-

स्यादारामी अध्याती है अदा होतायर भारत्या ।

I can, etc.

दशःणुदःरदःमीःभिम्रश्रःभीर्देर्दे।

I judge not mine own self (1 Cor. iv. 3).

Or better :-

दशः दः र दः र दः मी श्रेदः शः मुर्वेदः वा मिर्वेदः वा

I judge not, etc.

मिन्नमीनिन्नु के बेरा

What sayest thou of thyself (John i. 22).

Or better:-

हिन्दरमें क्रिंद्रायायम् कुरेप्पेन्।

What sayest, etc.

८२ मिर-रामीसार रे प्रा

Askest thou this of thyself? (John xviii. 34).

Or better :-

हिंदाणुश्यददेष्टिंद्रायदानी हिंदिर्देद्रायश हैंस्याभेददे।

Askest thou this, etc.

बुर्यरत्वीरः हो। र्यत्यर्येर्यर्यर्यं विद्यत्यर्थे वरः रूट्योर्ट्य्यर्यर्यं विद्यत्यः बुर्यं वरः स्ट्रियर्थ्यं व्यवस्थित्यः बुर्यं वरः स्ट्रियर्थ्यं विद्यार्थे विद्

Whosoever shall exalt himself shall be humbled; and whosoever shall humble himself shall be exalted (Matt. xxiii. 12).

IV.—COMPOUNDS IN 55' RANG.

(a) TC frequently forms the first part of a compound. Ex.:—

不下多了!

Self; One's self.

<u> ২৮.शुभश</u>।

One's own soul.

75.31

Each; each respectively; Hon. for you.

रटारेदे ड्राप्तमा।

Each has hold of his own leadingstring (D).

イによれる当に.

エC・子名・新五C・41

Each at his own door.

रट.चेच्याश.ज।

Spontaneous; of itself.

रट.सैनश्राग्रेश।

Spontaneously.

₹Ľ.ẫĽ.1

Self-sprung.

य. पंतर त्यर विश्व हो । स. मृचा पार्य , पंतर मोश्र सिचाश के . मंटा मूज् By ignorance one's future was of its own self destroyed.

नुस्रायान्दार्देशसानुत्।

Love seeketh not its own (N.T.). Bringeth not about its own ends.

Or better:—

Love, etc.

वुस्रसम्पर्देन वेत्री से दत्न।

I shall go to the house of my own accord.

ट.रट.पंचैट.चिट.ज.पंगू.मी.लूबी

Let us (the two of us) go hence together.

रटमिकेश होन् सप्ते वस्ति दे।

One's own perception, intelligence, and happiness, three things (D).

रटःरेग्'रटम्ब्रथःरटःयरेग्ब्रुस्

You will take your own life (D).

रदःश्र्मारदामीशामार्वेदःगीःनेद्रा

(b) $\overline{\mathbf{x}}$ also often forms the second part of a compound. Ex.:—

| ĨĬĸĸij | An unmarried man. |
|-------------------------------------|--|
| ₹, 4. | A spinster; a woman by herself. |
| र्देदरा | The very same, exactly, quite so. |
| ५'मा'रूट'र्थेब' १'रूट'र्थेब' | It is just so; it is precisely so. |
| Ā. <u>對.</u> ≠亡.Ⅰ | Quite early in the morning. |
| बेट्संट्र बेट्संट्र बेट्संट्र | With negative—Not much, Not many. |
| ८.२८.सॅ२.च.२८. मीश्र । | By the mere (just by) meeting with me. |
| क्षेन्द्रः। | A man all by himself; just a man. |

V.—Possessive Pronouns.

1.—ORDINARY PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

(a) Possessive Pronouns are formed by putting the Personal Pronouns in the Genitive case. They may either precede or follow the noun or object in respect of which possession is predicated. Ex.:—

| ने:प्ते:प्त्रुमा:क्ष्र-नेत्। | That is my thunder. |
|--|--------------------------|
| Or: | |
| वज्ञुणभरदे प्रते रे | That thunder is mine. |
| वर्रे चिर्ने नेवे केना क र्हे र नेर्। | This is your dictionary. |
| Or:- | |
| ब्रॅम् बर्हिन दर्गे हिन ने दे ने न | This dictionary is yours |

(b) In some works it is stated that the Possessive case may also be formed by affixing $\mathfrak{F}\mathfrak{F}$ to the shorter forms of the Personal Pronouns. Thus, $\mathfrak{F}\mathfrak{F}\mathfrak{F}\mathfrak{F}$ Mu, mine, of me; $\mathfrak{F}\mathfrak{F}\mathfrak{F}\mathfrak{F}$ His, of him, and so forth. If

this be so, it must be a very obscure Literary usage. If an Ü-pa heard or saw the expression \Box \Box it would probably raise in his mind the idea of egoism, selfishness, etc., and not that of the Possessive case as associated with the first person. Compare the phrase \Box \Box \Box i.e., possessed of pride, i.e., proud.

So, also, the expression ব্রামান বিনিম্ন said to be the the equivalent of ব্রামান বিনিম্ন The Lama's prayer-wheel, probably means The Lama with, or possessed of, the prayer-wheel.

2.—Reflexive Possessive Pronouns.

These are merely the Reflexive Pronouns put in the Genitive case. They then signify One's, One's own, My own, Thy own, Thine own, His own, Her own, Its own, Our own, Your own, Their own, according to the pronoun, either expressed or implied, to which, in the same sentence, they respectively refer back.

Colloquial Examples:—

CMTCT THE TATE OF THE COLLOQUIAL EXAMPLES:—

CMT |

COLLOQUIAL EXAMPLES:—

CMT |

CMT |

ট্রির্'রম'ম্ম'নার্ট্রানার্ট্র'র্ম্নির্'র্ট্রান্

हिंद्भैद्गीश्रास्टार्के देने में केंद्रास्टार्के केंद्रिया केंद्रास्टार्के केंद्रिय केंद्रास्टार्के केंद्रिय केंद्रिय

बुर-अन्ध्रिर-दम्भिन्तु-दर-प्रवृह्द्द्र-दर-

विश्नास्ति निश्चित्ति । विश्वास्ति निश्चित्ति । विश्वास्ति निश्चित्ति । स्राप्ति । I shall ride my own horse.

We shall have to cook our own food.

Will you bring your own servant?

You must all bring your own knives, forks and spoons.

Each of you must bring his own knife, fork and spoon.

He did not realize his own good luck.

They cannot tell their own names.

क्षेत्रेन्द्रिश (or क्षेत्रेश्वेश्वर्ग) रद्मनीक्ष र्वेद्गतिर्वेद्गतेन्द्रिशयीद्गतेक्षणी रुदुना

Every man believes his own watch is the most accurate.

মি রমধান্তব্যব্দ কি নি না দি দাধীন ব্যব্ধ ইবং মিনি।

They have all cleared out of their own village.

मिट्यं रे रे भारद्यी ब्रीट द्यार स्प्री

Every house has its own park (compound).

 पश्चित्राच्याता
 (था)
 भ्रामी

My own mother educated me.

In honorific form:-

द्रस्य स्थान स्था

My own mother, etc.

मिन्द्रमी पर्शेन्यन्ति यञ्जामन्त्रे धेन यन्त्री He was the architect of his own good fortune.

Every housewife thinks her own broom is the best.

मिन्द्राची क्रीट इस गी मीन मीस समी वेद विद्या

He succeeded because of his own diligence.

The following are Literary:—

म्रीलश्रायानीटामी मिरात्मरहो। भ्रीलश्रायानीटामी मिरात्मरहो।

He himself bearing our sins in his own body upon the tree (1 Peter ii. 24).

शुः भरामि स्रामी मित्री प्रेर्ने न्या स्रीतः या स्रामी स्

He who speaks of himself seeks his own glory (John vii. 18). म्रिट् वे रटमी मिलापस्स स से मुक् ग्राटा मिट रट मी प्यटश हैश गुरास नगरःरा

He came to his own kingdom, but his own subjects received him not (John i. 11).

नुस्रसम्बद्धाः द्वानुष् रदः श्रेंना रदानीश नार्डेद नी रेदा

Love seeketh not her own (1 Cor. xiii. 5).

You will take your own life (D).

रट्यानुस्रेत्र

If one have no son of his own (D).

VI.—DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

These may also be called Distinguishing Adjectives. The commonest are 35 THIS, and 5 THAT, as to which see § 27.

The following are also common:

35'5E'

This very, This same.

3.72.

That very, That same.

35. This particular.

रे.मा.र.

That particular.

イ・川・ベニ・

रमामार्ट.

That very; that precisely; just so; like that, thus; so; just that.

र्यामा Also the following:-

य'मी'

That over there, Yonder (far off).

That just there (nearer).

ल्या.

That up there.

म्मा

That down there.

These latter may be used just as they stand, or they may be put in the genitive case. Whichever method is adopted, they precede the noun that they distinguish, and they may be used with or without 5

Also the following:-

RSTS Such, such as.

EXAMPLES: -

৭ই শ্বু ঐৰ।

ই'শ্বাপ্রবা

नरे प्रेच (णुनाः) भेवा

रे द्वे श्वेन वर्गा भेना

भु द्वादे र वोशिष्ट्र भ्रिव वादि वो रेता

८.ज.रे.बंशाचीवटा श्रेयाता रे.रे.चा.रट.

चिषट.रूप्तास.चिषट.।

यसःगाः ५२ सः मी। मदः यः ५ मा माः ईसः होमाः यः ५ में मी।

यदे यम गामा दूर सं व्यापार स्था

त्रमाश्चरमा≅रःना≅रःद्राणुँमाणुँमारमानाः देर्ा

न्यामा इ.वंश. (or भावंश.) भु.लूट्रा

रमार्ट्य

यमी रेदे श्री त्यामा रे बेर मी भेर।

Or :--

य'मी (or य'मीदी) रे'नेदीकीटासमा रे'बेर'मी'ऑर। Who is this?

Who is that?

This is my brother, or sister.

That is my master.

That same gentleman will employ you.

Please give me what you can of that: literally, what you can from that, just that please give.

This road goes as far as to that house: literally, this road to that house, about just that, goes.

What is the road like to the pass?

Very steep and crooked, just like that.

That won't do at all: literally, like that will not come at all.

That is so.

What is the name of that hill away yonder?

What is the name, etc.

अमी र्रेट के द्ये दे और अप्ते के बेर मी The name of that big valley down there is Do-mo (Chūmbi).

দ্রিদ্দের দিন্দের দিন্দের দিন্দের দিন্দের দিন্দের প্রামান্ত্র দিন্দের দিন্দের

The Literary equivalents for most of the above are: -

| 3 5 | This. | ५ र्ने इस्र | These. | |
|---------------------|------------------------|----------------------|-----------------------|---|
| ই | That. | ने'इसस | Those. | |
| ८ र्रें के | | ने ⁻ ने |] | |
| ৭ই ঈ্ | | रें केर | | |
| 35.22. | This very ; This same. | ने [.] न्दः | That very; That same. | |
| ৭ই শিৰ | | रे मिंब | | |
| वरे मिंब केर | | ने मिन १९ | J | |
| ८ र्ने:गा'] | | रे" | | |
| ८ र्नेमा | This particular. | ने मा | That partic | ular. |
| २ २ ग-र | | नेगार्यः | | |
| ৰূ শুক্ত | | ਕ.ਹੁ. | | Save শ্ৰমী and |
| శ్రాషే | | শ্ব'দী | That there. | খ্নী these are |
| মদী | This here. | दिन | | not used in U, or Tsang. |
| इ ने | | র্ন | That. | |
| 45.42.4. J | | | | |
| रे.४५.म. | Such, Such as. | | | |
| ५ रेन्द्रर | | | | |
| ଜିଷ୍ଟସଂସଂ) | | | | Valaria e e e e e e e e e e e e e e e e e e e |

So named, Named.

EXAMPLES :-

८.४८.श्रुट. (or भक्ष्य.) पर्टे.खेश.चे.च ।

गो रे दे य हो सेंद य य विन विद दश सिद्ध されがよって当にすれ

लट खूंब विना नुंब हो केंबर दि लिट मबर से लानु नु मित्रे मूँ राष्ट्रिर छ। दे सम्भूषायाओं श्रेतायुग्

にはえ、あれ、かな!

I and one so named; I and so and so.

They laid hold upon one Simon of Cyrene, coming from the country (Luke xxiii, 26).

And behold, a man named Joseph, who was a councillor, a good man and a righteous, of Arimathæa, a city of the Jews (Luke xxiii. 50).

Such as this am I (D).

VII.—THE RECIPROCAL PRONOUN.

माठेमा माठेमा। ONE ANOTHER; EACH OTHER.

EXAMPLES :-

मिं हैं महिना मैक्षामहिना नुस्रस ये नुस्र 刻上.1

They loved each other.

अ अग्नु महिन्। र के मिरमा सम्बन् रमात कर के व रार मानेमाश रार ।

मिं के नाडेमानी सामाडेमा खेराया देता।

मिं के नारेमा नीश मारेना नी नुमा भेना लेक र्गेर्नेश्यारेर।

झक्रार्के महिमाक्रामहमामीक्षाम यनुमाक्ष ब्रंग निरा

में के महिमाद्दरमञ्ज्ञात् महिमासुद्धा 351

The ladies looked at one another mirthfully.

They have gone up to each other.

They have scrutinized each other's garments.

The Lamas received ceremonial scarts from one another.

They have gone in company with one another.

मि कें महिमायामहिमामायश्यत्वतृ गुै तर्मा

They are conversing with each other.

मुंदि-क्रुन्तिकानी स्त्री स्त्राची स्त

Ye also ought to wash one another's feet (John xiii. 14).

माश्रमात्रामाश्रमात्रमात्रमात्रमात्रमात्रमात्रमा

Some of his disciples said one to another.

VIII.—INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS.

In the Colloquial these are:-

. শৃহ is more commonly used than সাম

All the above are declinable like nouns.

The Literary equivalents are :-

In simple questions the Interrogative Pronoun is usually placed immediately before the verb. Ex.:—

ট্রি-স্থাত্মধা। ট্র-স্থান্থতা

Who are you? (singular).

Who are you? (plural).

५१:३:शुः ॲर।

ह्मसदरे के शुक्<u>ष</u> देन।

रेडिसम्बुख्युन्तून।

हिंदिकी श्रीतामा रे बेर मी रेदा

स्रमारेशाम्बेर्गमारे

म्ययदिकें नारे मारे रेर्।

रेक्टमारेमारेपर्म।

र्येक्षत्रेश्रुश्यक्तरारम्

न्येकः दर्भे के दिन्गु स्वस्य मिंद्र गुर्भामा

मीपर्रेरणीपरुमा।

Who is present?

Who are these Lamas?

What Lamas were there?

What is your name?

What is that box made of (by)?

What are these loads?

What horses were there?

Who sent this book?

Which of these books do you want?

If, however, the Interrogative is in the genitive case, it may come either before the verb or before its noun. Ex.:—

यःमी।प्रदासंदि रेन् or यामी खुदे । प्रदारेन्।

Whose house is that?

When, too, the sentence is more complex, the pronoun, though it precedes, need not immediately precede the verb. Ex.:—

मिन्द्विते वटावशासुकाटा अञ्चित के छेता सुना गुलित्ना।

Which of you can give me a rupee?

र्गोर्ब सर्हेना नी क्या श्रीर के रचे नाट रट. इस्ट सर जिस्सा

With what is the Kingdom of God to be compared? (Mark iv. 30).

हिन्द्रें दे बटा दश शुरु प्रायम्भेमा या महिमा समोता यर बुरु गुणे पर्मा। Who among you can charge me with any sin?

When the sentence contains an Interrogative Pronoun the Interrogative particle is not usually added to the verb. However, there is no harm in adding it. Ex.:—

हिंद्र गुरुष्माने ना देश में भिर्म द्वा

What are you building?

मिट मा ने शुक्ष महोका और or ऑट ट,

Who is going to build that house?

or लूट.एश. or लूट.एश।

यम्भास्त्रस्ति सर्द्रस्यामारे कुमी र्पेर्। What is that abbot's name?

ङ्कॅर्न मार्केर रेर्।

What o'clock is it? What is the time, or hour? Literally What water-measure is it.

अमीर्देटक्ष्यं देवित्यः स्टिन्स्यमः द्रश्यद्वा।

What sort of sport (wild animals, game) is there in that big valley down there?

न्। है.) यर जिल्लाने प्रत्या (or चीले. क्रि.श.चंश्वरात्रां पुरासेवेत्रां (or चीले.

What is the road like from Lhasa to Ta-shī-lhüm-po (Shi-ga-tse)?

The Literary equivalent of স্পের্থ is ইপুন, or ইপুন or ইপুন, or ইপুন, or ইপুন,

र.इ.केर.वेश.य.जामा

What is best to be done now? How best to act now?

शरशःमेशःभेशःचःपःशुःभःचःभेर।

What sort of Being is the so-called Buddha?

N.B. is more correct, but $\mathbf{\hat{E}}$ is also used interrogatively.

IX .-- RELATIVE AND CORRELATIVE PRONOUNS.

A.—Relative Pronouns.

In the Colloquial there is no pronoun corresponding to our Relative Pronoun Who, the force and effect of which are expressed by turning

what we call the relative clause in the sentence into a kind of adjectival or noun phrase. This is done by adding to the root of the verb the affix 자꾸것, which, it will be remembered, may take the Article, Definite or Indefinite. Ex.:—

सुनार्के नार्केन् सामन् ने प्रशासकें प्रमुद्ध । Or:—

लिबा.कू.चांबूर.श्राम्ब.धु.टु.टश.शहूट.वैट.।

Or :-

स्नार्केन्न्राह्म स्मायक्षेत्रः स्वायक्षेत्रः स्वायक्षेत्रः स्वायक्षेत्रः स्वायक्षेत्रः स्वायक्षेत्रः स्वायक्ष

भै वसर सम्बर्दे सेंश केंद्र शेंद्र ।

श्वरण्यात्रभ्राम्यन्ते स्थानस्य स्य स्थानस्य स्यानस्य स्थानस्य स्

ह्युट गु.चसर सामग्र से देने ह्युक्क टस हैं. े नेस गु.ळेर ।

समारामान्यस्य स्थानिक स

ह्यदार्गी तस्त्र समित मी भारतः स्रक्ति र . इति स्रोहरः । I have seen the man who kills the sheep.

He has seen the man who kills the sheep.

He who killed the man (i.e., the man-killer, or murderer) has run away.

I have seen the man who killed the wolf, i.e., the wolf-killer, or wolf-killing man.

I know the brother of the man who killed the wolf.

The man who killed the wolf has given me its skin.

I went mith the man who killed the wolf.

मुट्ट.प.वस्त्रभश.क्ट्र.सिट.पी.चश्चे.श्राप्तश.सुट्ट.

All the villagers ran to the man who killed the wolf.

(य) हेर्। श्चिर्णा, पश्चर श्चिर श्चिर श्चिर जा श्चेर र श्चिर गु. पश्चर श्चिर श्चिर श्चिर जा श्चेर र

The abbot gave the man who killed the wolf a rupee.

ल्यसःयन्द्रःसन्धः स्ट्रिंन् गुः तिन्ता। लेमामदःयःयः नीः तः र्स्ट्रिन् गुः तिन्ता।

A man who came with the Sha-pé is staying in that house.

भै ने लिनसायन निरास अभा नु प्यार स्थापन । भी निर्देश में दे मार्थिन से निर्देश

That man is the servant of an official who came with the Sha-pé.

८क्रेर्'भिमान्गशः मुच'माम्ब'मु सेदे सेट भग्नारे बेरमी ८रुमा

What is the name of the man who signed the Treaty?

প্ৰবৰ্ধ বাদ্য দুৰ্ঘ ক্ষাপ্ত ক্

The attendants who came with the Sha-pé bought many quaint things in Calcutta.

चर्याः स्रेट्कः चेश्वायः त्येषः वस्र । विद्रः देशः स्रीः वसाः वशः त्याः स्राप्तवः स्रीः त्याः

Did you converse with the Amban who came from China?

র ধানা ইনি মাদ্র মার্ র ন্রানা । ব্যামানা ইনি মাদ্র মার্ র ন্রানা ।

I have got two two-edged bans (swords) from a man who used to live in Lhasa.

The above are all in the Active Voice, but a difficulty occurs when there is nothing in the context to show whether the Active or the Passive Voice is meant. In the following examples, for instance, either voice may be implied:—

 EN स्थान स्यान स्थान स

I have seen the man who killed, i.e., the murderer, or killingman; or

I have seen the man who was killed.

In such cases the general drift of the conversation is the sole guide to what the meaning really is. In fact, the last three examples are susceptible of a third rendering, namely, The man who was killed by me has been seen; and, if this is not the meaning intended by the speaker, the Personal Pronoun State should be inserted immediately before the verb. Thus:—

I have seen the man who killed; or

I have seen the man who was killed.

The difficulty as regards Voice is, however, removable by avoiding the construction in राष्ट्रिक for the Passive Voice, and using instead the simple Participle as an adjective either preceding or following its noun. Ex.:—

 $\begin{cases} I \text{ have seen the man who was} \\ \text{killed.} \end{cases}$

Or the construction in ANA may be retained and something introduced to indicate by whom or by what the man was killed. Ex.:—

He has seen the man who was killed by the soldier.

संग्रह्म । नुसमा स्रेश नश्चर स्राप्त्र मुँ से दे प्रश चुप्ता । स्रमा स्रश्न स्राप्त्र स्राप्त्र प्राप्त्र स्राप्त्र स्र

I have seen the man who was killed by the soldiers.

The best way of differentiating between the voices in cases of this sort is to make use of the different roots of the auxiliary verb 3577 To do. Thus:—

মেন্টাবশ্ব (or নার্মির্') ব্রীব্'মা I have seen the man who killed or kills.

মেন্দ্র (or ন্র্রিন্) দুর্মান্ন I have seen the man who was killed.

ন্ধান্ত্র (or দ্বিন্) ব্রাবান্ত্র I have seen the man who is to be killed.

The Relative Pronouns That and Which may refer either to Animates or to Inanimates. When Animates are concerned, the construction for the Active Voice should be in 5175, as above exemplified. Ex.:—

चि नश्चरम्यान्त्र ने दश्य अर्थेट वुट । वश्चरम्यान्त्र ने दश्य अर्थेट वुट ।

I have seen the dog that killed.

मिः नश्रद्रास्य ने निः देवे सम्बाधित स्वरं सः से द्रा

The head of the dog that killed has been chopped off.

য়<u>য়য়য়য়য়য়য়য়য়য়ৢঢ়ৢঢ়ৢঢ়ৢঢ়য়য়য়য়য়য়য়য়</u>

The dog that killed the man has not been caught.

When Animates are concerned, the construction for the Passive Voice is also in APA, when the Agent is indicated; and in a simple Participle used as an adjective, either preceding or following its noun, when the Agent is not indicated. Ex.:—

ন্ত্ৰমান্ত্ৰ ক্ষান্ত্ৰমান্ত্ৰ ক্ষান্ত্ৰ নিজ্ঞান্ত্ৰ নিজ্ঞান্ত্ৰ নিজ্ঞান্ত্ৰ নিজ্ঞান্ত্ৰ নিজ্ঞান্ত্ৰ নিজ্ঞান্ত নিজ্ঞান্ত্ৰ নিজ্ঞান্ত্ৰ নিজ্ঞান্ত্ৰ নিজ্ঞান্ত্ৰ নিজ্ঞান্ত নিজ্ঞান নিজ্ঞান্ত নিজ্ঞান্ত নিজ্ঞান্ত নিজ্ঞান্ত নিজ্ঞান্ত নিজ্ঞান্ত নিজ্ঞান নিজিজ্ঞান নিজিজান নিজি

I have seen the cat that was killed by the dog.

विक्रीयम् विक्रीने प्रमानिक्या

I have seen the cat that was killed.

This construction may also be used when the agent is indicated. Ex.:—

Bardad.ag.@.g.z.ca.agc.ac.l Baraad.ag.@.g.z.ca.agc.ac.l

I have seen the cat that was killed by the dog.

When Inanimates are concerned the Participial construction should be adopted. This construction, like the one in মান্ত, is also in itself incapable of differentiating between the Active and the Passive Voice. Thus:—

ञ्जनासक्तायाने प्रने सेन। or प्रने ञ्जनासक्तायाने सेन। This is the iron that broke (something); or, This is the iron that was broken.

The following, however, illustrate the Active Voice, as an object is mentioned, and the sense is therefore clear. Ex.:—

र्ने यसमायि सुमाश रे पर्रे रेर

This is the iron that broke the stone, i.e., the stone-breaking iron.

This is the stone that broke the iron.

(प्रदश in Colloquial) प्रनुम्। Or:— इमास्रद्दार्थिंगायानेप्रनेद्दार्द्दम्।

Here is the arrow that struck the rock.

The following illustrate the Passive Voice:—

क्षेत्राक्षणीयात् अत्राक्षण्यात् । क्षेत्राक्षणीयात् । क्षेत्राक्षणीयात् । क्षेत्राक्षणीयात् । क्षेत्र । व्यव्यास्य क्षेत्र । व्यव्य व्यव्यवस्य व्यवस्य व्

This is the iron that was broken by the stone.

This is the stone that was broken by the iron.

सन्सन्धिन सन्देशन नित्ति सन्ति । वित्तास्त्रे स्त्री स्त्रे स्त्रा व्या क्षेत्र स्त्रे स्त्र Here is the rock that was struck by the arrow.

I will give you the book that you read to me.

The Active Participles \widetilde{W}_{5} \widetilde{W}_{5} , for Animates, and \widetilde{W}_{5} \widetilde{W}_{5} , for Inanimates, may also be used for the construction of Relative clauses, the former being put in the Genitive case, and the latter also, if it precedes its noun, but in the Nominative case if it follows its noun.

EXAMPLES :-

न्भः झः स्रात्यः स्पिन् स्मान्यम् । स्रोत्या स्पितः । नाः ने नाः स्वा

A man who is now in Lhasa will come.

चनाःसनाः भेटः वनाशः सः स्ति । सन् । स्ति । सन् । सन्

The cave that is in the forest must be searched.

रम्बिस.ग्री.परेसा

The cave that is in the forest must be searched.

In this last case the Pronoun नारे (or नार), which, may be used thus:—

हिर्-रक्षमहिर-विराद्य । सम्बद्धमाना-रे (ज मार) विराद्धमाने वर्णेन्य-रे प्रकृत-र्मेश-मिन्ने वर्णेन्य-रे प्रकृत-र्मेश-मिन्ने

The cave that is in the forest must be searched.

Or:— ८क्वेट-प्रेमा (मान्रे) झ्रश्राचन्त्राश चर्मुयायाने सिंहिन्स्शासर्वेट मुस्स्या Have you seen the Treaty that was signed at Lhasa?

B.—Correlative Pronouns.

The English Personal Correlative Pronouns, the rendering of which into Tibetan has now to be considered, are:—

| I or WE |)- 1 | ANYBODY | 7 200 |
|-------------|------|---------|----------|
| Thou or You | Wно. | ANYONE | 1 |
| HE or THEY |) | Nobody | Wно. |
| WHOSO. | | No one | L_{ij} |
| WHOEVER. | | | |
| WHOGODYED | | | |

The Impersonal Correlative Pronouns may refer either to Animates or to Inanimates, and are:—

What, or That which.

What so.

Whichsoever.

Whatever.

Whichever.

Whichever.

Nothing that.

1.—Personal Pronouns.

When the Pronoun is in the first or second person, singular or plural, one construction is to use the Pronoun itself, in its ordinary non-relative form (5, 55, 7, 55, etc.), and to turn what we call the Relative part of the sentence into a sort of Noun-phrase, with the aid of the affix 5/5. Ex.:—

I who am conversing with you (i.e.,
I the converser with you) am
your king.

We who salute you (i.e., we your saluters) are your subjects.

ष्ट्रित्सु मुला मानदारे लाटा हैं साम मि द्वार मुण्येत्।

We submit to thee who hast subdued us, i.e., to thee our subduer.

Sometimes, however, the sentence has to be wholly recast and a participial construction adopted instead. Ex.:—

ਉਨ੍ਹਾ ਬੁਝਾ ਸੁੱਕ ਨੇ ਜ਼ੁਕਾ ਕੇ ਜ਼ਿਲ੍ਹਾ ਹੈ ਜ਼੍ਰੇ ਜ਼ੁਕਾ ਕੇ ਜ਼ਿਲ੍ਹਾ ਹੈ ਜ਼੍ਰੇ ਜ਼ੁਕਾ ਕੇ ਜ਼ਿਲ੍ਹਾ ਹੈ ਜੇ ਜ਼੍ਰੇ ਜ਼ੁਕਾ ਕੇ ਜ਼ਿਲ੍ਹਾ ਹੈ ਜੇ ਜ਼੍ਰੇ ਜ਼ੁਕਾ ਕੇ ਜ਼ਿਲ੍ਹਾ ਹੈ ਜੇ ਜ਼੍ਰੇ ਜ਼ਿਲ੍ਹਾ ਹੈ ਜ਼ਿਲ੍ਹ ਹੈ ਜ਼ਿਲ੍ਹਾ ਹੈ ਜ਼ਿਲ੍ਹ ਹੈ ਜ਼ਿਲ੍ਹਾ ਹੈ ਜ਼ਿਲ੍ਹ

Thou whose son is with us (i.e., thy son being with us, thou) must be our king.

When the Pronoun is in the third person, the construction may be either in 到识证 Whoever, Anyone who, He who, etc., or in 和四元 Ex.:—

ब्रह्म (or त्रुंश) द्वेब्द (or द्वेब्द ब्रह्म (or त्रुंश) द्वेब्द (or द्वेब्द

He who (or whoever, or anyone who) runs away is (or will be) a coward.

सु:ल्रान्त्र (or ल्रान्त्रम) सदःवसः सदःस्मान्त्रभः रेत्।

Nobody (or no-one) who comes will ever return: or, he who (or whoever, or anyone who) comes will never return.

सुते क्षेमाय मिंद णुस्यस्य (for यः) देत्। र्हे ते क्षेमाय प्रस्य र (for यः) देत्।

Whose-soever sins ye remit they are remitted.

श्र.च्रेंश.क्रेंथ.वंश.लट.चर्मेच.लूट.।

He who (or whoever, or anyone who) runs away will be shot.

रे ड शुमाकेर मिना क स्तर स्वस्त्र मिकेर सर् से स्टिंट (or क्स स्पट मिकेर सर् में स्टिंट

Anybody who (or he who, or whoever) goes to sleep there will never wake up.

સૂંય.ભૂદ. **!** જ્ર.**૮**ટું.શૈજ્ઞ.ઇ.વૈદજ્ઞ.વે.ભદ.ભદ.સૈન્ડ.વિ.

Whoever (or anyone who, or he who) drinks this water will be thirsty again.

शुर्धिद्वायदायशाम् नुद्दुद्वांशामुः देद्र।

He who (or whoever, or anyone who) comes must work.

শ্বরান্ত্র ক্রান্ত্র ক্রান্তর বিদ্যান্তর ক্রান্তর ক্রান ক্রান্তর ক্রান্ত ক্রান্তর

Whoever (or he who, or whosoever or anyone who) works will be paid.

Whosoever hath, to him having been given, he shall have abundance; but whosoever hath not, णुट ॲर्न सन्देश्वार्थिट or वर्षेमा सम्बन्धमा रहे। from him even that which he hath shall be taken away.

Anyone towards whom the bull rushes will naturally run away.

ं श्रुंगीरें । (or कुमारे मोर्टेट क्। अट रे शेसश श्रुंगीरें ।

Anyone with whom that Lama over there quarrels will regret it.

Sometimes both NWC and NRT are used together. Ex.:-

शुःषोनो दिनै दिनि समिन ने भाषा प्राप्त । will give a rupee to anyone who will carry this letter.

N.B.—It will be noticed that \S is usually separated from $W \Gamma$ Moreover, it is the \S and not the $W \Gamma$ which takes whatever casesigns are necessary, and the $W \Gamma$ comes in at the end of the relative clause.

2.—Impersonal Pronouns.

In the case of What (in the sense of That which) which is really a Correlative Pronoun, the participal construction is adopted, and the Pronoun $\mathfrak{P}^{\mathfrak{T}}$ (or $\mathfrak{P}^{\mathfrak{T}}$) That which may be used or not at pleasure. Ex.:—

हिंद्र देशमाने (or नार) हिंनाय देवे देवे (दमा) नमें मोने देव दशा

Or simply:

चित्र रेश सिना या नेते रेत ना न में मी दन्नामश Do you understand what you are reading?

दशः हिन्ना (मान्ने or मान्न) यन्निया You must do what I tell you.

हिंदाय (मारे or माट) द्र्मेश्वादारे I will buy what you want.

देश (मार्ने or मार्र) ध्येन्याने रहा I do not know exactly what they cost.

तिर्देश (मारे or माद) वर्तेर्य नेत्र I will give him what you like. यहिष्य मिला भेरा भेरा भेरा भेरा भेरा में

The other Impersonal Correlative Pronouns, which are more forcible than নাই and নাট What, That which, namely, নাই আট, নাট আট, and নাট নাট, What so, Whatever, Whatsoever, Anything that, and, with a negative, Nothing that, may be illustrated thus:—

ब्रॅंग्रेशमारे वेद्द्रम् प्रदायमाय दितुमा।

Or:—
ब्रॅंग्रेशमारे वेद्द्रमादे प्रदायमाय दितुमा।

Or:—
ब्रॅंग्रेशमाद वेद्द्रमादे प्रदायमाय दितुमा।

Or:—
ब्रॅंग्रेशमाद वेद्द्रमादे प्रदायमाय दित्तुमा।

Or:—
ब्रॅंग्रेशमाद मुद्देर्द्रमा दे प्रदायमाय दित्तुमा।

दिन्ना।

Whatever, or anything that, she does is good.

चित्र सेते । सम् स्वते । ब्रम्या ना से व्यत् । स्वते । स्वते

Or :--

He can tell the price of anything that, or whatever, is in your house.

Whatsoever is in a man's heart will influence his whole life.

मृत्रुं सुना स्टायम् या म्यारा मारा खेरा या देश

हेर-मुै-फोर्ग । हेर-मुै-फोर्ग ।

Or :--

त. हेर. जूट. । प. हेर. जूट. । प. हेर. जूट. ।

Or:--

हिन स्वर अमार स्वर सहिन्ता

<u>र्माश ग्राम वेर क्याहित श्</u>चित्र वेर्की ऑस ।

Or:-

५मुश्रम् । अभेरा Whatsoever is in a man's heart will influence his whole life.

I will give you anything that, or whatever, is in my power.

Nothing that the enemy does will save the fortress.

विंद्रः देशः मादः त्यवः यः देशः त्यामानीः सः देत्।

You are right in absolutely nothing that you have said.

<u> दशमाद्येशयन्त्रश</u>स्य मानी सेन्।

I recede from nothing that I have written.

दश्यानानाश अर्देट अर्थेट (or अपुट) I have not seen anything.

3.—Literary Constructions.

(a) The following examples illustrate the Literary method of rendering relative clauses:—

नेर.ट्रा अथश. क्ट. चक्ट. यश श्र. ज. श्रेची. चट. चुट. ड्रॉट. उच्चश. चे. चचट. च्र. श्र.श्रेट. च.

Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down and cast into the fire (Matt. vii. 19).

सुरामा क्षेत्रामा सुन मी मिना क्षेत्रामा क्षेत्रामा क्षेत्रामा स्थानी सुन मी मिना क्षेत्रामा क्षेत्राम क्षेत्र क्षेत्राम क्षेत्र क्षेत

हैं न न के स्थान के स्था के स्थान के स

रें मझ ब के मुर्के यें दे 'खेब' य' रे मुक्क यें के सुक्ष । के र्नोंब सकें ना मी 'खेब' य' रे र्नोंब सकें ना मी 'खेब' य' रे 'र्नोंब सकें ना क' सुक्ष होना।

लट हिन गुरु टाय महिट यह माझे यहेन ने के ने नाम स्थान

दते अन गुरा द्या महत्त्वते सर्केन्वय ने दश्यात्राम्य सुदायम्य स्वर्मा स्वर्

দেশ পেন দ্রী, প্রত্থর, ব্য<u>ুর্</u>টি, থুপা, বীপা, নারু,

क्षेत्रमुअन्दर्भन्मामदन्त्रभाष्ट्रिःभन्त्रभाष्ट्रम्।

म्बिर्यरम् मुन्दि सम्बुन्।

मार्थेर् पुरे य सुना।

ये त्रीयः देते : इर : यक्तुमाशः दशः विद्गः लेशः ये त्रीयः देते : इर : यक्तुमाशः दशः विद्गः लेशः देशःश्री And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but considerest not the beam that is in thine own eye? (Matt. vii. 3).

The stone that the builders rejected the same was made the head of the corner (Matt. xxi. 42).

Render therefore unto Cæsar the things that are Cæsar's and unto God the things that are God's (Matt. xxii. 21).

And the glory which thou hast given me I have given also unto them (John xvii. 22).

The cup which my father hath given me, shall I not drink it? (John xviii. 11).

The works that I do in my father's name, they testify of me (John x. 25).

A man sick of the palsy, lying on a bed (Luke v. 18).

The calf that is to be killed.

And Philip ran to him and said, understandest thou what thou readest? (Acts viii. 30).

(b) The Literary Correlative Pronouns are:

£1.

शुःलेमाः

Whoever, Whosoever, Anyone who, He who, etc.

चट्रि.

אבישבי

È or in certain cases &

मार

माट.बुचा.

माद है

मार-१५

माद्दमार्केर

אבישרי

g.ML.

रु.पट.

WHATEVER, WHATSOEVER, WHICHEVER, ANYTHING THAT, THAT WHICH, WHAT, etc.

The following examples will serve to illustrate the Literary rendering of the Correlative:—

श्चुंशः दः रुमा भः नृमुः शः नुेन् यः नेशः देन गुः े समारा नेन नि

He that is not against us is for us (Mark ix. 40).

Not everyone that saith unto me Lord, Lord, shall enter into the Kingdom of Heaven (Matt. vii. 21).

कुर, सूर, कुम, स्र. तीट. । पूर्य, पीट. वस. वस. मिश. मांशूज. स्नामय. जू. स्. वस.जस. वीट. शुट, क्षंत्रां जा. श्रीका. ता. वससा. स्ट. ग्री. वट.

Among them that are born of women there hath not arisen a greater than John the Baptist; yet he that is but little in the kingdom of heaven is greater than John (Matt. v. 11).

मिंद्र गुरुष से प्रतायास मिया हिना।

Resist not him that is evil (Matt. v. 38).

है: महेन 'रु हिंद र्ह्म 'ल्य हे: माउद मा दे: महेन 'रु हिंद हमस कु ल्य हे: यह माउद यह स्मार्ट

With what judgment ye judge, ye shall be judged (Matt. vii. 2).

स्तर्भिता हिर्टर्समाक्तरमाध्या स्तर्भित्व हिर्टर्समाक्तरमाध्या स्तर्भित्व हिर्टर्समाक्तरमाध्या

And whosoever shall compel thee to go one mile, go with him twain (Matt. v. 41).

वित्रायालुकायाने त्याक्षेत्रालिया। वित्रानका वित्राणी त्यत्रात्रोत्रायाने त्याक्षीयाका क्षेत्रा हेगा।

Give to him that asketh thee, and from him that would borrow of thee turn not thou away (Matt. v. 42).

सु: भट: हें तरे. या तनीया वा ने नुसासूरः प्रक्रमा सु:या हें ते त्येया वा ने नुसासूरः वह: वर त्युरा

And he that falleth on this stone shall be broken to pieces, but on whomsoever it shall fall it will scatter him as dust (Matt. xxi. 44).

मी.सूनी.चण्चनी.स.ट्रेश.सूच.तर.चर्स्ट्रे.स. ट्रेश.चण्चनी.सर.जचीर । श्रेश.मीट.रट. श्रेश. मिट. रट. ची.सूची.सूच. तर. चर्स्ट्रे.स.

Whosoever shall seek to gain his life shall lose it, but whosoever shall lose his life shall preserve it (Luke xvii. 33).

ହ:दे.जशाद बैट.ब.बशालट.धु.सूंश.कुं। सन्द्रप्रचीन। शेश.मेट.टश.कुंन.चट्र. शेश.मेट.कु.चे. जश.पबेट.ब.लट.सूंश. Everyone that drinketh of this water shall thirst again, but whosoever drinketh of the water that I shall give him shall never thirst (John iv. 13).

हेट क्या हुँद या देश स्था हट त्यस में हिस्स भेदा नहिसा हुँद या देश स्था हट त्यस में हिस्स हेट क्या हुँद या देश स्था हिस्स

मिट मीश माट अवेट य न्दिक्श य ने त

निर्मात स्रोति स्त्रीय स्टिंग् स्ट्रिस्स्य । विर्मात स्राह्म स्ट्रिस्स्य । विर्मात स्ट्रिस्स्य स्ट्रिस्स्य । विर्मात स्ट्रिस्स्य स्ट्रिस्स्य । विर्मात स्ट्रिस्स्य स्ट्रिस्

क्रेट्-व्यः श्चेशःयः वे श्वेश्वरः केट्-अवः वे । वाटः प्वत्यः श्चेशःयः वे श्वेश्वरः केट्-अवः वे ।

धे.मुझ.दे.ता.माश्चरकाय। ट.स्ट.चिंद्र.स्ट.

श्वेते :श्वेमाय हिन् दस्रमण्डेश श्वेभ व ने न्मा मी श्वेमाय श्वेभ दस्य

शुः त्यः स्पेर् यः देः त्यः नावदः हेः ह्यानाः यः स्पेर् यरः त्युरः वितः गुदः शुः त्यः सेर्यः दः देः त्यक्षः सेर्पेर् यः देः स्थानः सेत्यः स्युर्वः से

श्च. लुब. चीट. टे. पा. करे. या प्रज्ञां यर. टुरे. विश्वश्च. प्रविताः वे. यक्ष्मां श्वापतः श्वशः चीट. ट.चूर. टे. प्राप्तशः ख्निमाः लुनाः ख्वां श्वापतः श्वशः चीट. ट.चूर. टे. प्राप्तशः ख्वां या. श्वरां विष्

<u> २गुर रें।</u>

He that cometh from above is above all: he that is of the earth is of the earth, and of the earth he speaketh (John iii. 31).

What he hath seen and heard, of that he beareth witness (John iii. 32).

God is spirit: and they that worship him must worship in spirit and in truth (John iv. 24).

That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of spirit is spirit (John iii. 6).

Jesus said unto her, I that speak unto thee am the Christ (John iv. 26).

Whosesoever's sins ye remit they are remitted (John xx. 23).

Unto everyone that hath shall be given, and he shall have abundance; but from him that hath not, even that which he hath shall be taken away (Matt. xxv. 29).

He that rejecteth me and receiveth not my sayings hath one that judgeth him (John xii. 48).

But he that troubleth you shall bear his judgment, whosoever he be (Gal. v. 10). श्रुशः गुदः रदः यन्दः श्रायदः मीः मानाशः यः वर्नेन्यने वैः यने वः स्रायदः मीः मानाशः यः

ट. यर्ट सामक देवे . यहक या क्षेत्र हो।

বৃদ্ধে মান ব্যাধার বি ব্যাধার বি ব্যাধার বি ব্যাধার বি ব্যাধার বি

माट र्वेनास दस स्पेर् स्व दि । माट देर स्ट मीस र्वेस । माट सेमा मीस सर्वेट । माट समा सम्बद्ध । माट सेमा सम्बद्ध । माट सेमा सम्बद्ध । माट सेमा सम्बद्ध । स्व स्व सम्बद्ध । स्व स्व सम्बद्ध । सम्बद्ध ।

हेन्द्रेक्या हेन्द्रक्या हेन्द्रिस्स्प्र्तः स्ट्रुक्या हेन्द्रम्या हेन्स्र्रिन्तुःद्रद्रया हेन्द्रेक्या हेन्द्रम्या हेन्द्रेन्तुःद्रद्रया स्ट्रिक्या हेन्द्रम्या हेन्द्रिक्या But he hath seeketh the glory of him that sent him, the same is true (John vii. 18).

It is his teaching who sent me (John vii. 16).

He who built all things is God (Heb. iii. 4).

That which was from the beginning, that which we have heard, that which we have seen with our eyes, that which we beheld and our hands handled. declare we unto you (I John i. 1).

Whatsoever things are true, whatsoever things are honourable, whatsoever things are just, whatsoever things are pure, whatsoever things are lovely, whatsoever things are of good report; if there be any virtue and any praise, think on these things (Phil. iv. 8).

X.—Indefinite Pronouns or Pronominal Adjectives.

1. In the Colloquial the following are the most common:—

মূন্ত্ৰী Some one; a certain (person).

নাম প্রনা Something; a certain (thing).

मारे प्रेन्द

मानियोदन्याः (or योदन्यः) | Something.

मा-दे-लिमा

Nobody, None.

```
मिट्रियद Any.
मारे'अट'
אובישוב.
               Anything; or, with a negative, Nothing, None;
                   Whatever, Whichever.
चाट.चाट.
या याश
माट ना or माट
위도.L. or 링도.
                   All, Whole, Entire, Every, Complete, Full.
বথার. ৫১.
क्टाश
दमाद केंद्र Several.
सदः विश Most.
\mathbb{Z}^{[n]} \mathbb{Z}^{[n]} \mathcal{Z}^{[n]} \mathcal{Z}^{[n]} \mathcal{Z}^{[n]}
माल्ब यः विमा
अव्यालेग Another.
5.22.
3.
₹.₹.
               Each, Every.
शॅशॅ
मार्डेश'गा Both.
मारेमा नारेमा One another, Each other.
A.AN Some.
র্নার্ড A few, Few, A little, Little.
```

मार्डमा यें Sole, Only, Mere.

শৃত্তিশৃ'হা' Same; but $\vec{\zeta}$ 'হা' That same.

र्भे महिनादा Various, Sundry, Divers.

55' Self, One's self.

ন্টন্তন Even one, Either. With a negative, None, Neither. ৪১৭১ Such.

EXAMPLES :-

रुषालिमा (or रुषाने निकें) याञ्च Once upon a time a certain Lama came from Lhasa.

हुः अ'रे'र्ट में दिना अ'रें के केंद्र । That same Lama went to a certain village.

द्रि श्रेम् । विन् ने विन विन विन ये द्रि । I think he went to get something.

শ্বাম শ্বিমান শ্বিমান

शुंभाषाः देवाब्रेन भेषितः। No favour will be accorded to anybody.

प्रभागात्र ने शुप्पा चेन मुन की ने ने Anybody can do this work.

भे तिर्भागारे हिर्मारे मार्थर अपत्तुर Anything that this man does turns into gold.

विंदा द्रनीं नहीं नहीं प्राप्त करानी Nothing that he begins is ever कारेड़।

न्यन न्या क्ष्रा । Out of the whole army not one man (nobody) was saved.

भु द्रमा २ दे त्यामार्थियः हा ल्या द्रमारा मादा This gentleman desires a cup of tea.

रिते हिंदा ता मु ब्रम्म उर् मर्मिन्स ग्रॅंड Soon afterwards the entire herd of cattle vanished.

रे रेट मिर्न के सुझाया ध्या दें मारे खेंद्र Have you any good oranges to-day?

प्रभागाः देः पाः द्रिमादाः द्रमादाः केदः द्रमिताः गुः Several coolies will be needed for the work.

ন্ ন্মেন ম মান ব্ৰাদ্ভ কিন্ত কৰি জীৱাৰা In India most people are very religious.

र्नेर गुः भुः द्रमार्ने वि व्या मुखः स्रेशः A Some Tibetan officials are staying at Gum (Ghoom).

নাপ্ৰ'ম' (or অৰ্ম') ঘ্ৰম্থান্তৰ্ম্ভাষ্ট্ৰ' All the others have returned to
Lhasa.

रैंदे ब्राब्स मान्य मान्य हैं हे ब्रोद ये Some of the others are staying in Darjeeling.

দ্মেন্দ্রদেষ (or নাইনিদ্রা) ন্যান Kindly give me another cup of tea.

শিনান্দ্রদেশ্বন্দ্রদেশবাদ্রদেশ

क्षे. देश. A-क्षे. A-क्ष. A-कष्ट. A

Or :--

श्र.श्र.श्र. च. भ. ज. च. च.च.च. इ. इ. स्वत श्र.श्र.श्र.श्र. च. भ. ज. च. च.च.च. Each man presented a complimentary scarf to the lama.

इन्देन्द्रान्त्रः ब्रेंब्र्स् विम्।

र्युक् शॅट ।

८र्ने सुमुमार्त्रेशगादे छाय भेता

द्यानस्र ग्रह्में स्थान स्

नु के अहं श में मिठ्ठ श मा हो नश के हैं।

परिन्दारीमान्नेशामान्साणीरित्।

हिमा पर्ने मिन्निस गुँ नेंब दमा महिमा स रेन् इस ।

यम्ब। देमिकेशमदि देव दमामिकेमायः धेदयद्मा।

केंगा पर्नेते नेंब नगान्य निवेश नगान्य । माडेया यासेन नमान्य ।

यम्बा रे.माक्ष्याग्ये.र्नेबरमाः वर्गाक्याः यात्रारेत्।

म्बद्धुमंद्रमार्डें दर्मिश गुरेंप्र।

Give each horse a pail of water.

Each man carried three big boxes.

This is the father of both the boys.

Both of us shot the bear.

Both the pretty girls have come.

Both this and that will be suitable.

Do these two words mean the same?

Yes, both their meanings appear to be the same.

Is the meaning of this word exactly the same as the meaning of that word?

No, both their meanings are not absolutely the same.

I want a few grapes.

र्गेश।

८.प.रटेजा.स. श्रमा.स.

A very little money will do for me.

भेमाउना यदे पुरा (or पुरा से माउना या) पाट केंद्रे तर्मात मीट दरे वा सदस मुश्यर में मुस्य रेहा

At sundry (various, or divers) times many Buddhas appeared in this world of ours.

रे के दे न्णेयाया सामारे महिमारी से रेन्।

The lama was the only man among them.

क्रिमायामारे देवायात्रमी ५५म। ब्रास्मु माउँमा सं ने रा

Why be angry? She is a mere child?

दर्न महिला गुरिन्द द्रशामारीमा मीका ऑद मी Either of these two will do. 351

दर्भारेश गोजद वसमारेमा अद दिसारी Neither of these two will suit. ME.I

भे र्ह्मिः स्ना सदः रे दे बदः बद्धा मार्डिया ध्यदः Of the entire thousand men not even one escaped. 선도.와.첫C. 1

Examples of KC Self, One's self, will be found at § 31, iii, IV.

Examples of नहिन् नहिन ONE ANOTHER, EACH OTHER, will be found at § 31, vii.

भूर द्राप्त प्रशासना दे प्रशासने प्रशासने I have never seen such a difficult language. 티지도 | (pron. nyúng).

The following are the Literary equivalents of the above:-माउँमा उँमा Someone, Somebody, A certain (person).

उ'लेगा Something, A certain (thing.)

| माःवद्यः | | |
|-----------------|--|--|
| दमाद केंद्र | | |
| दमाद विमा | | |
| दमाद-लट. | Some, Several, A good many, A good deal. | |
| ୟ'ୟ' | | |
| त्रात्र विमा | | |
| माट हिमा | Anyone, Anybody, Whoever; or, with negative, No one, Nobody. | |
| 劉·씨드·) | Enormone Fisher II. | |
| אַר־ישרי | Everyone, Either, Each; or, with negative, No on Neither. | |
| डेप्पट. | Anathina | |
| डें'बैया' { | Anything, Whatever, Everything, Either, Each; o with negative, Nothing, None, Neither. | |
| গ্ৰমহাত্ত্ | | |
| यूद: सः गुवः | All, The whole, Every, Entire, Complete, All. | |
| प्रयतः ह्विमाः | Mere, Sole, Only. | |
| শ্ৰপ্ | Other. | |
| म्बिक् लेगः | Another. | |
| म्बिमा म्बिमा | Each other, One another. | |
| ج .) | | |
| ₹:₹• | Each, Every. | |
| शंश | | |
| ম্'নারুদা'ন' | Various, Sundry, Divers. | |
| য়ঀঽয় | | |

| भट.हा. गीथ.पश.झेची. | $igg\} Most.$ |
|--|-------------------------|
| मोकेशागाः | Both. |
| §5.€. | Few, Little. |
| कृष्ट:5:बिमा | |
| दमाद. | A few, A little. |
| प्रमाद.क्ष. | |
| डेमा' | |
| न्द्रमा | |
| 35 | Self, One's self. |
| 5E' | |
| 3 ⁵ 7.) नाठुमान्तः) | Same. |
| रे:मिंक रेगा रेग्नः रेगान्दः पर्रेग्नः | The very same. |
| ५ २°५५:) | Such. |
| ন্বৰ.প্ৰ্ৰ. | Either, Each of two. Ex |
| The state of the s | |

सम्बर्गीत्म्यस्य हुन्तु।

On each side of the two shores of (lake) Mapham (Jäschke).

ধ্ব ব্ৰুব্ৰ বৃষ্ট্ৰ | Either, Both. Ex.:—

धारमार्ड दियो प्रमास्त्र द्वामा अस्त्र । And on either side (i.e. both sides) of the river (Jäschke).

§ 32. Adverbs.

These are both primitive and derivative. Of Derivatives, some are formed from Pronouns, others from Nouns, and others from Adjectives or Participles. There are also Adverbs of Time, Place, and Manner, Interrogative, Negative, and (added to verbal roots) Relative adverbs.

Those derived from adjectives are formed either by putting the adjective in the terminative case, or by adding to the adjective the expression 5 % 5 %. It is a common habit, however, in the Colloquial to use an adjective adverbially without changing its form.

Adverbs are always placed somewhere before the verb. Interrogative adverbs come immediately before the verb. Others may be inserted at any convenient place in the sentence, so long as the rule is observed that they precede the verb.

The following are some of the commonest adverbs and adverbial phrases used in the Colloquial:—

| | ADVERBS OF TIME. |
|--------------------|---|
| ना-दुशः ना-दुशः | When? |
| म् ८ | (Added to verbal infinitive) When, At the time ofing. |
| मार्ड्यासट | Whenever. |
| 5₹1 | (Added to verbal root) When, used relatively; While. |
| ና 'ቔ' | Now (at this time); うっぱって Just now, At present. |
| <u> </u> | Hitherto, Up to now. |
| <u>ই'</u> 5্শ | Then (at that time). |

প্র-প্রথ

| | TILI II TATAL OLIVATION | |
|---------------------------------------|---|--|
| दे .बश. | Then (after that). | |
| र्वशःस्त्रेमाकरः | Hereafter, Henceforth. | |
| वेश स्तर | Ever, Always. With negative, Never. | |
| ব্ম-দূর্ব | | |
| रुष:कुष: इमायारे:महोब: | Ever, Always, Constantly, Incessantly, etc. | |
| ह्यान र | When I at anhon About At the time | |
| र्ड'ब' ∫ | When, Just when, About, At the time. | |
| 2.2c.mc. | | |
| 73F | Moreover, Furthermore. | |
| ५ निर्देश | | |
| <u> </u> | (Added to root of verb) Ever, with negative Never. | |
| रे-देट-सट.) | | |
| ₹\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\ | Now-a-days. | |
| মহ্বমর মহ্মর | Now and then, Often, Sometimes, Occasionally with negative, Seldom. | |
| रे'दमादः | | |
| ਅ੮.ਸ਼ੁੈ੨. | Again, Afresh, Anew. | |
| র্ক্র-শান্তিশা 🌖 | Once. | |
| গ্রদেশ-দার্থদা. | | |
| ਰਬ- श्रट. | At once, Immediately, Hurriedly, Hastily, Directly. | |
| ন ্দ্ৰই কৰ্মনান্তনা) | once more. | |
| ५:३८:४४:मीडेमाः ∫ | . 07000 110010, | |
| <i>ક્ર.વે</i> જા. | (With negative) Not at all Name Lange | |
| TITTI | With negative) Not at all, Never, In no case. | |

회장자 A short time ago Formerly, Previously, 시트 A long time ago भर्गेमशःग्रेर or भर्गेमशःग्रे Quickly, Soon, Presently, Directly, हें चेंदर or हें चें In a little while, In a few र्क:5मा minutes. ন্নীয়ার্ডমানান্তিশা After, Subsequently, Afterwards, Next, Last, In future. At last, At length. र्नोद्यः Already. PAL Lately, Recently. ये दि Late শুন্ত্ৰ Early. द्रमें र ये अपने Without delay. নামানাম Slowly, Gradually, Gently, Softly. মন্মেন্দ্র Last night, Last evening. Last year.

ধ্যম Eventually, Later on, Indirectly.

Aূর্নী (Added to verbal root) Just, Just about, On the point of, Going to.

53. Some time ago.

५ लें, or दर्ने लें, or लेंदिने This year.

নিই C' Year before last.

द्युं'त्राः । Next

र न्यास्थाः Next year.

न हेन

元章 Last year.

রু.পূ.

ब्रेंग्रेंग्रे Yearly, Annually.

३ मन्मायारे मिल्र Daily.

মান্দ্রীক To-morrow.

予究で To-day.

F지다 Yesterday.

विमास दें दें Every day.

के अर्डेम Some day.

ADVERBS OF PLACE.

यायः

শ-5 Where? Whither? (Also relatively.)

শাৰ

নাব Wherever, Anywhere.

Note.—In Lhassa $\Im \Im \Im$ Ďir, Here, Hither, is loosely pronounced as if it were spelt $\Im \Im \Im$ Ďä, i.e. something like the English word They, as pronounced by a Eurasian, with a slight dental d sound to the Th. Hence one sometimes sees the Colloquial form of Here, Hither, spelt $\Im \Im \Im$, which is not quite a correct form of the loose Lhassa pronunciation. Similarly one sometimes sees the Colloquial form of $\Im \Im$ There spelt $\Im \Im$.

Both 35 and 55 are incorrect. For the former the student should always use 35; or 35, when writing; and, if he chooses to affect the Lhassa pronunciation when speaking, he should say 35, not 35 For 55 he should always write 55, or 55

খ্ৰাদী Over there, Yonder.

भाभी Up there.

ম'নী' Down there.

অং Upwards.

মাই Downwards.

मुक्त $\left\{ Uphill. \right\}$

মুহ' Downhill.

समें सहमा समाया

श्रमी मिलिमा स्त्राचा रा

Upside down.

क्य.जूना-

८५ निष्य Hence.

ই'বৃষ্ণ' Thence.

अर्जुता Before.

{ Ahead, In front, Onwards, Forwards.

मानुमाः Behind.

श्रमाद्भार Afar.

মিন্দামে Opposite, Over against.

ಹೆಇಇ Instead of.

FA Just by, Close by.

বৃষ্ণ Off.

र्मुय सुनाशासः Backwards.

মুন্ন্ৰ্মান Outside, Without.

JEW Within, Inside, At home.

বৃত্'বৃত্থ' From within, From home.

यु अन् दश From without.

নাত্ৰিকাম To the left.

নাম্মামা To the right.

মপুরার Together, Jointly.

শ্ৰামান Everywhere.

বৃদ্ধির ম Around, Round about, All round.

শ্ৰুব্'ব্ৰ' Elsewhere.

35.5 Aside.

N'NT Asunder, Apart.

Adverbs of Manner.

or Q5 (The first added to root and the second to infinitive of auxiliary verb) Probably, Likely, Perhaps.

Thus, So.

35.35 (pronounced DIN-DA)

दर्ने वर प्रिक

डेश.

ल्या.

खेद्रा.

र्मा:बेर

2.山.之亡.

5'শ'ই5' Quite so, Just so, Precisely, Exactly.

ইমান্ত্র By degrees, Gradually.

ቫኝና (Used with negative.) Quite, Completely, Absolutely, Thoroughly.

देवे मुन्द्र नुष्ठा वृष्ठा Consequently.

নার্টনা মান Simply, Merely, Only, Solely.

55 Simply, Merely, Just, Only.

रे जिला नुसान्त्रा Alternately.

স্থাম Almost, Nearly.

মঙ্গমন্ত্রীম'

**Together, Jointly, Unitedly.

Together, Jointly, Unitedly.

[주·주·주리 Separately, Individually.

ম'ম'সুম'ব্ম' Severally.

दे देश दुरु विश्व Singly.

सुमाह्य ह्या वदः मिल्न Formally.

পৃত্যু Merely, Only, Solely, Entirely.

প্র-বর্ষা

র সাম (Used with negative.) At all, On any account.

₹.4४1.

अन् यें or अन् यें Well, with negative, Ill, Badly.

अमाना Better.

भना ज्ञा Best.

অন Even, Likewise.

্রন্থ বৃষ্ণ Fairly, Honestly.

ত্ত দা প্রমাণ্ডম Carefully.

ইব ইব প্রমাধ্য Definitely, Punctually, Steadily

দ্রীমান্ত্র Tagar Justly, Legally.

हॅने झन } टेन्स्निः { Certainly. ম'ব্য' Orally.

Fr Personally, Precisely, Exactly.

শ্বামন্ত্রাব্রা Privately.

देश.रार.

ন্ত্র নার্ম নুম বৃষ্ণ | Really, Sincerely, Surely.

यट्टा गुरानुसानुसा

अर्गुन्न अर्थे मुर्ग प्रश् Promptly.

सत्युमारा गुरा न्या Punctually.

5555 Especially, Particularly.

Eminet.

यता.क्रेरः

Ordinarily, Usually, Generally, Universally, Chiefly, Principally.

প্রশার্কির Decidedly, Exceedingly.

মু'ব্দা'র্ন' Clearly, Distinctly, Lucidly, Intelligibly.

ব্স'র্নুব' As a rule, Usually.

ব্দেশ্বন Indirectly.

न्त्रायम्बरमः Aback.

ইন্ট্র্যান্ত্র্য Diligently, Zealously, Earnestly, Heartily, Genuinely.

८२ दिन्स अभार Herewith.

মহামুন্তি Easily.

নামিনামি Gradually, Gently, Slowly, Softly.

5. (Between a duplicated adjective or adverb, with 5. at end of sentence) Of course.

Adverts of Quantity and Comparison.

শ্রেই How much? How many?

ਪ੍ਰਪਾਣੋੜੇ Chiefly, Generally.

WE Even, Likewise.

555 (Used with negative.) Quite, Completely, Absolutely, For the most part, Mostly.

Almost, Nearly. With negative, Scarcely.

ਰੱਲ, or in Coll. ਰੱ About, Approximately.

ञ्जूना रा More.

मद'र्नेश' Most.

55: AN Least.

555 Too; or add St to any root; or add 544 as a verb to any root.

र्गाद यंदर Scarcely.

হালে }
Enough.

পৃষ্ণ Only, Entirely, All.

र्नेमार्ड Partly.

शट.र्.

9537 Much. With 55 added, and followed by a negative,

Not much.

मिम्द्रासदारी Many.

Very many.

```
সাম তি much, Too many.
```

3575 Few.

35. Little.

র্নার্স A little, A few, Some.

WE.

7.22.

Besides, More yet.

2.2E.ME.

35 NT Too little.

Interrogative Adverbs.

मारे देवाया

मामी देवदमा

चाट.ज.

र्वेनमद्भार

જ્ઞેત્ય

3

मा.पर्श.

हे सूर, or हे सूर.

테드'라

ना-रङ्गः

वद्या.

괴.지.

माउ

मान

चावश.

म्बाट.ब्रह्म.

Why?

How?

When?

Where? Whither?

Whence?

गर्दें र हैं.व्या

How much? How many?

Adverbs of Affirmation, Doubt and Negation.

मनाश. त्रात्रम्थः মদারার या:लाट שועבי लम्बारा-देर

Yes.

পদাহা-সূত্র-

শেবাধা-মূৰ. त्यमाद्यात्रोत्.

No.

तरा....रमद

Rather (i.e. Than) pleases.

मारुमा ग्रेन्'

लेब्स्यद्

Perhaps, Probably.

ध्रेष द्रों

चार-श्रुथ-ग्रीट-मान्द्रःश्वेषःद्वदः

At all events, In any case.

वे केंग मेर पर

Without doubt, Unhesitatingly.

P. 421.

य.जभ.

Rather, For the most part, Somewhat, Almost, Nearly, with negative, Scarcely.

£.44.

श.वश.

(With negative) Not at all, Never. At all, Ever.

```
ENIZZ.
चाट.म्राज्ञाना
                   Surely, Certainly, By all means.
ব্রহানান.
J.342.
                   By no means, Never
देव देव
                  Indeed.
टे मेंग
र्राट-
          (Added to root of verb), Ever. With negative, Never.
ZJ.
                 Not.
3
सेर्'य
                Not possessed of, Devoid of.
र्शर
श्रव.
                   Abbreviation of 5 th Is not, Are not.
र्भेड
                   Abbreviation of NW5 Is not, Are not.
```

As regards the Adverbs and Adverbial phrases used in the Literary language, it is hardly worth while giving a list of them, as the student can easily find them for himself in Jäschke's or Rai Sarat Chandra Das's Dictionary, or in Csoma de Körös's Grammar, where he will see how and to what extent they differ from the Colloquial expressions.

Examples of the use of Adverbs and Adverbial expressions in the Colloquial:—

यह केन देन दों के नण ने स्मुन दों (or When did the Pän-ch'en-rin-po-ch'e (or Ṭa-shī Lama) come from Ṭā-shī-lhüm-po (or Zhyi-ga-tse) ?

न्याय ह्या है । इस अमूर्य केय मृत्युट प्राप्त (or ऑर्प्स) इस ।

When the minister's son got married there were great festivities.

ঀৢৢঀয়য়৾৾য়য়ৼৼঢ়ৢঢ়৽

When the meat is nearly boiled.

ন্ত্ৰিন্দ্ৰীমানানুমান্ত্ৰাজ্বনাজনে (or Whenever you can, get married. মনানা মিন্মা (or এব)।

वित्रमायः वित्र के कि वित्रमायः वित्र के कि वित्रमायः वित्र के कि वित्रमा

मिना क्राचेट मी दर्म।

वित्रणुष्यमानुभू माञ्जम्भामात्र्रभार्भेत्।

*ॸ*ॱॸॆॸॆॱॸॆॺॱॺॱळॅ॔॔॔॔ॱॸॆॸऻ ॸॱॡॱढ़ॖॱळॅ॔॔॔ॸॱॺॱळॅ॔॔॔॔ॱॸॆॸऻ

मिट स मंद्रे रुष त्नुत र्सेट ।

श्री-द्रमन्मिन श्रीटा

लमास्त्रका होता । प्रमास्त्रका होता दक्षा न मिला न ने मिला होता हो हो ।

अनी स्प्रें र समिति मीता सिंदा।

मिं निबुन्य क्या के केंद्र न्या केंद्र केंद्र । विद्राक्ष का का केंद्र केंद्र ।

स्त्रीहा (brour united) ह्रीया स्त्रीहा (brour united)

मिन्देन्द्रम्यायदः सेन्येदः द्या

Where are you living?

Whither is the monk going?

Whence comes he?

How is your mother's health?

What is the price of that horse?

What o'clock is it now?

What have you built yonder house for?

Why have you come here?

While the house was being built, it collapsed.

He died about dusk.

When he went home he ate his dinner.

When he was eating, he fell.

How long (how many hours) is it since he died? i.e. was alive.

Have you ever been to Lhasa?

No, I have never been to Lhasa.

Will you ever go there?

हैं स हैन द क्ष अप द में मि प्रेंद दाद Some day I may go to Lhasa.

দেশু র অ'অচ শ্রীর র স্ত্রীন (pron. nyúng.)

I have never even been to Chūmbi.

मुक्सार्शः। भुक्सार्शः।

Many people have never been to the hills at all.

रे के वमारेट वमा के र त्रुमा

The hills are very far away.

झन्त्रं क्रिक्त । अन्त्रा। इन्हर्मे अन्त्रा। Lhasa is too far away.

५.३८.ई.४.५.१८.चेर.वेर.वेर.वेरी

Moreover, Lhasa is too cold.

ने वस्र उन् सेन्। नुद्र स्म में प्रेन्।

That is not all. There is much more yet.

५.७८.के.स.प.वे.र.के.ब्रे.स्ट.म.लूट.।

Furthermore, there would not be much to do in Lhasa.

झ अ ता तर्ने न तथा है हे हो हो तथा है र रमाद मी रेरा I would rather stay in Darjeeling than go to Lhasa.

ळॅर मिठेमा ८ ळॅ दे रसमा न्युट ळे झासाया सुर सेंटा।

Our troops once went to Lhasa.

५.७८. (or Vulgar Coll. ५.५५) क्र-मुडेमानेर ५.मॉ.५मॉ.मी.फ्रेंश्या५५। They may have to go there again; or, Perhaps they will have, etc.

राष्ट्री म्रीट मी श्वापाया सुनि वक्षा त्या यह मानेका

Twelve years ago I went to Europe.

विद्यमियाँ मार्डे ५ रे५।

How old is that tree?

मिंद्र विंगार्ट्य प्रवा

How old are you?

र्यः (अट:र्यः) श्रटः त्रृम्। र्यः (अट:र्यः) श्रटः त्रृम्। I read that book some time ago.

बूबिल बूबिल हमा श्रामहित या देता

Anciently (of yore) the five prefixes were pronounced.

देदः श्रदः हेदः गुःशेष्ट्रमा

Now-a-days they are not pronounced.

८स-द्ये क: दे: मा या प्यट हेंद ख़ुव गुःसे प्रमा I cannot find the book anywhere.

नदः श्रेषः गुदः दसः देः दः स्रे संब्दः नीः क्षः वद्ना At all events I do not see it now.

९र्रे:इं.वेंगा

Come here.

दर्ने उस स्प्रा

Do not come here.

मिश्रम्बर्ध्यस्य स्तरम्

They went away yesterday.

어와. 회단. 저士. 현리

Go away immediately.

दते ह्यून द्विन मुक्ष ५ उट मार्थाय द्वि मार्थ ट मो प्रतुमा My teacher speaks very distinctly.

र्दशः क्षुतः विकारः ५. छटः अनुविष्धः विकारः सुः ५५म।

He always speaks very fast.

विसायन माने दसायस ह्या विराजनी मी से

I do not understand him easily.

ৢঽ৽য়ৣ৽ঀঽ৽৻ঽ৽য়৽য়ৣঢ় ৻৻ৢঽ৽য়ৣ৽ঀঽ৽৻৻য়৽য়ৣঢ়ঢ়

Do not make so much noise.

मिर रेश भर केव ये परी पर मुगवकारिक

Why are you talking so loudly?

<u> द्यामाने से द</u>ा

मः स परे हिर ल सर क उट हो य स्ना न.वर्गी.पर्मा।

This lama is only telling you the

रे.र्राप्तिमस.र्पोर्शिसस.विट.ज.२.०८.र्ष. र्ग.वश.स्वयश.श्रट.।

The judge came to court very early to-day.

अट नेन विट के दें हो हो जिन ते के or हो ? Probably he will be late to-morrow. ल्ट.ट्या

रखः रदाणः भागाः ५ भावेरः भ्रमा द्वरादाः द र्गेत्र्म।

Just now it is terribly hot in Calcutta.

हिंद. रट.चीश. रटेज. मिश्रश. घट.ज.पंचिर.

Take the money to court personally.

री.ची.कट.कट.पर्. चार्य चार्त्य चार्र्य सा 351

How old is this little child?

८१.५५५.मान्स्रः स्मानाया

What pleasant weather!

८५.८२५.डेचेश्चाश्चानश्चाताता

What a cutting breeze!

दर्दित्रे तमा गायमामाय।

What an excellent road!

दर्दित्र विकास

What an enormous dog!

तरे तर्ते अया मार्केश याता।

What a thick branch!

वर्रे वर्त्र वे सुक्रें महिंदायाया

What a beautiful girl!

र्ना र्ड स्ना र्रेट्। छ्रिं पर्वेद या से सिस यदै देव दमामारे देर।

Wait a little: why are you so impatient?

ब्रिंद्र-गुर्भः विदः चःदर्नेः च ब्रें-चदे र्ट्यः देना नाः 3.351

Why are you building this house?

प्रमुप्तरेपद्मारायाद्द्योत्द्रम्। म्याप्त्वाद्याच्चस्रक्षराज्द्रम्पिद्दात्राः स्रोत्रह्मारायाद्द्रम्। Why is the child crying like that?

Have all the servants gone on ahead?

८८ द्या मायस छिनास त्या है नस नार्येन सुनास या सुन नस हैना है ना सुना ता मीर्येन या यह नाकेस रां द में दिनीस गी रहे ।

First you must turn to the right, then to the left, and then go straight on for a distance of about twelve paces.

वित्रायमः गित्रः सद्यतः त्यास्त्रेयसः याद्याः त्याः स्रामित्राः ।

When you reach the road end. shout to me.

मिट्य दर्रे थ है है मा अमाय छेर।

There are rats everywhere in this house.

गायागान्वसर्दे हे ब्लीटायावनाकेट बुटाना र्वेट केट्रा

How far is it from Calcutta to Darjeeling?

नगाय हिंत श्रुप्त हैं है हो हो प्रत्य श्रमा के हों है द

Is Kalimpong close to or far away from Darjeeling?

দার্থীনে বংবদ্বং মং ব্রংঅদার্থী ব্রংঅদার্থী $To \ pray \ is \ of \ course \ very \ excellent.$ বির্বা

§ 33. Postpositions.

What we call Prepositions, such as Of, To, In, On, By, With, From, About, Concerning, etc., and certain Prepositional phrases like By reason of, For the sake of, With respect to, According to, Instead of, etc., are rendered in Tibetan by Postpositions, some of which are simple, and others compound.

The SIMPLE POSTPOSITIONS consist of the primitive particles which are used in the formation of the Cases. (See § 25.)

As regards the Nominative Case, no such particles are used. (See § 25, I.)

As regards the Vocative Case. (See § 25, II.)

As regards the Accusative Case, no particle is necessary, but if desired the Postposition Q may be inserted. Ex.:—

मिंशनु सं नुस्रक्षये नुन् गुष्टित्ना।

Or :--

He loves the girl.

मिंश सुः सं त्या सुस्रकार्ये सुन् गुणि दनुना।

With this case the postpositions \P , \P , and \P , as far as, Up to, To, Till, are used.

N.B.—The following verbs may be used either with the bare accusative or with that and the postposition A

ষ্ট্রন, ন্র্নেন, ব্রুমান, রুন্ন, To give, to deliver.

মূর্না, মূনানা, To teach.

९८५'रा, निन्द्रा, To tell, To explain.

क्रिंगम, क्षुत्रप्रवेवशं बुन, क्षुत्रप्रमुख, To show.

g'a, To petition, To beg, To offer.

ন্দ্ৰি, To fear, To be afraid of.

র্থিন্'শ্, To strike against.

र्नेम्श-मुद्देन To help, To aid.

तिम्पान To bring.

As regards the Genitive Case, the particles are $\tilde{\eta}$, $\tilde{\tilde{\eta}}$, $\tilde{\tilde{\eta}}$, $\tilde{\tilde{\eta}}$, $\tilde{\tilde{\chi}}$, $\tilde{\tilde{\chi}}$, (see § 25, IV). Ex.:—

भुनाना सर्ने। The sheep's head, or the head of the sheep.

মুদ্দান কৈ। The bull's horn, or the horn of the bull.

ধমান্ন্ৰ-শূ নান্ধান্ত্ৰা। A dialect of the Colloquial.

वना भेव ने मिट । Price of bread.

সমাণ্ট্ৰান্ত্ৰা The foolishness of pride.

PE'ন'র বিই'বার্ The height of this house.

स्रेश्चरस्य मा सरा वे कैंग नी के ! 'यर'मी'सामश्राय' or रेमा'या এনামার্থিমেন্টা বিময়। मिट्यंदेरे अंबेरस्य। जियते.ह्माश.सक्सशा र्वार्ट्य आया माध्येत सर्मा।

The woman's name.

The danger of uncertainty.

The wisdom of the East.

The law of custom.

The height of that house.

The end of a chapter.

The handle of an axe.

The colour of a turquoise.

As regards the Dative Case, the particle used is A (see § 25, V).

As regards the Agentive Case, the particles used are ম', মাম' ্টাম'. মীম', বিম', and আম' (see § 25, VI).

मिंश सु से पुस्र में पुन् भी तर्गा

He loves the girl.

पिश्रास्त्रमा रेंब पश्रद शेंद ।

The hawk killed the pigeon.

त्युनामीशः त्यानः अमी त्रमा।

The dragon is eating the moon.

८.४८.मीश.४ग्र.७.४.मुमाश.लूर।

I have read that book.

मिंद्राणीशासहमानातासानासानासा

Have you hurt your finger?

নির্'মে'ব্য' (or ব্র') নিনিব্রাব' His father taught him.

刻二.1

प्रिंते, मुनाश राजा प्रशापश्चा प्रशास ।

His companion did the work.

इं'दनमुक्षाया र्नेनाश्चयाणुप्तर्ना।

Weeds are choking the corn.

भ्रेना भग गुरा से बसस उर पत्रे भ्रेर गुर णु । এবনা

Discipline improves all men.

বনাব র্ড্রম সর্বমধ্য মর্তমধ্য মে শ্রী Joy will sometimes kill people.

नृत्यानीशामिस्त्रान्यान्त्रेशान्तुना। स्राप्तेशामितार्गनासानुसासिता।

Money vuined him.

This man helped him.

As regards the Locative Case the particles used are :-

$$\left\{\begin{array}{c} A^{\bullet} \\ A^{\bullet} \end{array}\right\} \ In, \ On, \ At, \ By, \ \text{etc.}$$

বর্চু বৃষ্ণ Through.

5.
5.
5.
7.
8.
In, On, At, By, etc.

(See § 25, vii.)

(See § 25, viii.)

As regards the Modal Case, the particles used are:—

বৃষ্ণ By, Through, By way of, Via.

55 Against, With, e.g., with verbs of meeting, fighting, paying respect to, visiting, etc.

N' (Silent) With, Because, Since, etc.

Ex. (Rather literary) By, Through, On account of, For, By reason of, etc.

(See § 25, ix.)

As regards the Ablative Case, in the limited sense in which it is used in this Manual, the particles used are:—

AN Than, Except, Save, But, But for, Besides, etc.

$$\left. \left\{ egin{array}{l} oldsymbol{q} oldsymbol{N} \\ oldsymbol{q} \end{array}
ight.
ight.
ight.$$

(See § 25, x.)

As regards the Terminative Case, which in this Manual includes certain aspects of what is usually called the Ablative Case, the particles used are:—

5, 5, 5, 5, and A, signifying Direction towards, and 55, 58, and AN, signifying Direction from. (See § 25, xi.)

Of the COMPOUND POSTPOSITIONS, most are used with the Genitive Case. The following are a few of them:—

| Case. The following are a few of them:— | | |
|---|---|--|
| र्नेत्यः) | About, Concerning, Regarding, With respect to. | |
| र्देव त्यः | On behalf of, For the sake of, With the object of, For the purpose of, In order to. | |
| টু ুবুন্টুুগ | On account of, By reason of, In consequence of, Through, By, Because of. | |
| ਡੀਟ.ਯ. } ਡੁੱਟ.ਯ. } | Above (on top of), $Upon$. | |
| Mx. or M2. | \emph{Above} (Higher up). | |
| बटान्ड् र | According to, As, Like. | |

Amidst, Among, In the middle of.

회기'라' ਛੁਂਟਾ.ਯ. Behind, Back, Afterwards, Next. Before (place), In front of. Into the presence of. Instead of, In place of. वट वहा From within. ST.M. Inside, Within, In. X.U. Just by, At the side of. 3 वमानुःरा (used with During. 24.51. 47. or 4.11. On the edge of. ਭੂਨਾ**ਪ**। यहाथ In reply or answer to, In return for. Below, Under, Beneath, After. The following are used with the Accusative.

5েইবিউন্ With, i.e., Along with, Together with, In company with

22.21321.2.

र्दात्रांचा or र्दात्राय Equal to.

553 X Near to.

55 Far from.

সুশৃ Until, For (time), As far as, For (space).

ম'শার্নিবারা' Save, Except.

EXAMPLES.

<u> ६श.रेट्रे.र्रेन.प.क्ट.भ.जेश.ग्रे.ल्र</u>ी

I know all about that.

मिलामिते सेन सुन ता सुन सते तमा मी क्रिंग मिलामिते सेन सुन स्त्रा स्त्रा सुन

Ask him all about his journey to Tibet.

८२ै:र्नेब्रामिन्दः मन्बर्काः ५५म। श्रेटिं सुमिन्दे मुक्तमिशः नेश्वेदः।

This is not according to reason.

मिस्रीय मध्य बटा मिले प्रसाम देता।

The people died in consequence of the famine.

He behaved like a fool.

इसना से कें अस मन नी हेश अपने नी ने दन्ति मी मुख्य मंदित

The soldiers used to march after the Amban.

रेते. या नी क्षमा था माम्हा हेर् या माम्हा हेर् पर्मा

There is not much snow on that hill.

द्ये अर्बरामान्त्री।

येव केंगामा रेड

Do not walk before me.

मिर्के मुक्ष मारेष में केवे दुष्ट पुष्ट सामा नेता

They came into the presence of the Dalai Lama.

क्षे.ची.ट्रेट्र.जब.ट.ज.च्रिश.चर्ड्यमा.ल्या च्रिट्र.क्री.चर्ल्यमा.च्र.ट्रेश.च.क्र्य.ट.

Let me write in reply to that letter.

Your servant may go with the coolies.

यानी विष्य मुना (or वर्ष) धर्मि Come with me as far as that house. मक्रमार-विमा।

§ 34. Conjunctions.

In Tibetan the use, as in English, of Conjunctions like And and But is generally avoided, and the sentence is reconstructed, so as to begin with a subordinate participial clause, of which clauses there is often a long string before the principal verb is reached.

EXAMPLE:-

मिट याया मी दिने होता याया दहारी हिंदी या ब्रेन पुन जुन or ब्रेन भे पुन or ि that house is not mine, and I cannot give it to you. ब्रेर व्याणी सारेत्।

Here the sentence is turned into: That house not being mine, I cannot give it to you.

Not being, the negative form of the participle present of the verb To be, is rendered ইার্মাম The affirmative form Being, would be पेरियम, or भेरियम।

2. But where the Disjunctive idea is sought to be expressed the form JUNT is used thus:-

PEC दाय मी दि थीन न अद ने दश हिंद That house is mine, but I cannot give it to you. लाड्डेराष्ट्रयाणुःसेर।

Here the sentence is turned into: Though that house is mine, (yet) I cannot give it to you.

It would be quite allowable, however, to avoid using the Conjunctions altogether, and simply say:—

मिटायायायाची दिवे की ने देश मिंदाया श्रेरा That house is not mine. I cannot give it to you. व्रवाणु सेदा, or ध्रासी वरा

- 4. Instead of JUC, as above, WC alone, or JC according to the final of the preceding word, or the gerundial particles $\frac{1}{2}$ (after final $\frac{1}{2}$), $\frac{1}{2}$ (after final $\frac{1}{2}$), and $\frac{1}{2}$ (after final $\frac{1}{2}$), $\frac{1}{2}$, and all vowels) may be used. Thus:—
- দ্রাম্প্রম্পর্ম (or ऑर्-र्) Though that house is mine, I cannot give it to you.
- 5. Another way of expressing the same idea is the following:—

 PE-ঘ্ৰান্ত্ৰিক্তিব্যান্ত্ৰ (or সাধ্তিত্ৰ) As, since, or because the house is not mine, I cannot give it to you.

 বিদ্যান্ত্ৰিক্তিৰ্যান্ত্ৰিক্তিৰ বিশ্বিক্তিত্ৰ বিশ্বিক্তিত লগতে কৰা কৰিছিল কৰিছেল কৰিছিল কৰি
- 6. As illustrative of similar formations in connection with verbs other than $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{7}^{-}\mathbb{C}_{7}^{-}$ and $\widehat{\mathbb{W}}_{7}^{-}\mathbb{C}_{7}^{-}$, note the following:—
- नादशः सदः दीः नवशः व प्यदः दः हैं हैं। होदः यः Though it was snowing hard I set out for Darjeeling.

म्यास्य स्टार्चा ययस्य गुद्दः हे हे हे हे त्या

Ditto.

- ক্রম্মান্থ্য (or ন্ন্র্যার্ভর রূপ্ত) As, since, or because it was not raining I set out for Darjeeling.
- ক্রমান্ত
- ক্রমান্ত্র (or ব্রর্থমা) As it is not raining I shall set out.
- कर पासे प्रवास क्षा प्राप्त प्रमुक्त मुँ सेन्। It is not raining, but I shall not set out.
- 7. The expression Either...or, is rendered by ঋচিব, or by জন, বুল, etc., or by ঋচিবীব্ৰ Thus:—

लत्यकरायान्यासामुयत्रम् र

Or :--

कर यद्र मार्का द्वा द्वा देवा

Or :--

कर या भट दानादशाद्याय देवी देता

Either it is about to rain or about to snow.

क्षान्यसम्ब्रह्मः । ज्ञान्यसम्ब्रह्मः अद्रास्त्रह्मः व्याप्त्रस्य । ज्ञान्यसम्ब्रह्मः अद्रास्त्रह्मः व्याप्ताः न्यस्यस्यः

Either, lord, you will go or you will hang.

८.लट.थ. देची.त. लुब. लट. भुध.य. देची. य. ु लुख.

Or :-

Either I am right or wrong.

८.रचाचात्राक्षेत्रवसः श्रव वसा।

<u>इ.स.च.चीचाचासःश्रुचा।</u>

Is the horse in the stable or not?

8. If is rendered by the expression স্মান্ত or স্মান্ত or, as is more usual, by বৃ alone. Thus:—

ন্মান্ত্রিন্দ্র (or ব্রুনার) If I am right, or if I were right.

Or simply:—

८:दमाय:ॲर्ज (or ५५मान)।

Ditto.

The second and third persons also take this 💥ད་ན་ or འདུ་ག་ན་
Thus:—

हिंदिनायाधिद्व (or तर्नाव)।

If thou art, or wert, right.

मिन्नाय स्पेर्न (or तर्नान)।

If he is, or were, right.

So with the verb To have:

দেশেরইন্বিন্ট্রেন্ (or ৪১ দার)। If I have, or had, good fortune.

And similarly for the other two persons.

With verbs other than $\widetilde{\mathsf{W5}}$ and $\mathsf{35}$ (To be, or To have), the conditional sign $\mathsf{5}$ is simply added to the verbal root, Present, or Perfect, for all persons. Thus:—

प्रश्नाम् त्यालु त्य व कुश्य।

हिंद्र ग्रीश मिंत्य कुष्य व कुश्य।

प्रश्नाम त्यालु त्य व कुश्य।

प्रश्नाम त्यालु त्य व कुश्य।

हिंद्र ग्रीश स्था त्यालु त्यालु व कुश्य।

हिंद्र ग्रीश स्था त्यालु त्यालु व कुश्य।

हिंद्र ग्रीश स्था त्यालु त्यालु व कुश्य।

If I can, or could, give.

If thou canst, or couldst, give.

If he can, or could, give.

1) he can, or comm, give.

If I ask, or asked, him.

If thou askest, or askedst, him.

If he asks, or asked, him.

ਨੇ ਉੱ ਤੋਂ But if, is confined to Literary Tibetan.

9. Expressions like Ago, and Since, in the sense of From the time that, are rendered thus:—

<u> दश.च.च वश.चश.जू.चार्शंभ.शूट.।</u>

Or :--

ে। বিশ-বি.শ.ব∃ধ.বশ.লূ.নারীশ.গু⊂.।

Three years ago I ate meat; or, It is three years since I ate meat; or, I have not eaten meat for three years.

10. Our common conjunction And is expressed by 55° meaning with, used as an enclitic, but only the first two nouns in a series are connected by it, however numerous the series may be. Thus:—

र् अः र्वेर् र्ट र्ष क्वियार्ट दिवसासु Time and tide and death tarry for nobody.

Between two Imperatives, especially in Literary Tibetan, And is rendered by A. Thus:—.

ज्नाता च्या विमा। Come and see.

In Literary Tibetan, moreover, in addition to 5^{C} and \mathbb{N} , And and But are rendered by \mathbb{N}^{C} and \mathbb{N}^{C} , and by the gerundial particles

 \mathfrak{F} , \mathfrak{F} , or \mathfrak{F} , and \mathfrak{F} , \mathfrak{F} or \mathfrak{F} , especially in sentences in which And occurs frequently, and it is desired to vary the particle. Thus:—

कृ.कृट.जम्मश्चा। त्यायः कृटासमात्मात्मस्त्रीटःच।

र्देन् महिन् हैट वर्शकायायह। विन नेमास के हिट सर्वे पासे।

Eating flesh and drinking blood (Das).

Tall and well made. (D.)

Heat is hurtful (but) cold is beneficial. (D.)

As you are of high and noble birth. (D.)

If I have prophecy and know all mysteries and all knowledge, and if I have all faith, so as to remove mountains, but have not love, I am nothing. (1 Corinthians xiii. 2.)

Come ye out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord. And touch no unclean thing; and I will receive you, and will be to you a Father, and ye shall be to me sons and daughters, saith the Almighty. (2 Corinthians vi. 17, 18.)

11. In the Colloquial WE or, after final \(\Pi\), \(\Ti\), or \(\Ti\), \(\Ti\) or \(\Ti\), \(\Ti\).

EXAMPLES:-

लट.ब्रेंश.चेना।

And behold.

वेकण्यस्यद्धिर्यस्तरेत्।

There is no sugar either.

वे सायार होत्।

Nor milk.

वें क्षेत्णु एकेत्।

Nor milk-jug.

भैव गुप्ति द्वार मिंहा वा

However, if you want them.

ने देश मिससान्यें दानीसान हैंद्राया साम्ब्राटा वालेटा

Then the judge said to the prisoner.

य:देर्।

रिते नुत्र नुस्र दस द्वा निर्देश त्या निर्देश विद्या In that case I shall acquit you.

दें व द्वेंदिशया स सर्द्धिया।

Well, don't be angry.

The Literary equivalent of ways But, However, is as me

12. Whether is expressed by using the interrogative duplicative suffix. Thus:—

েব্লাইটিউন্ বৃধ্বাধ্বর বৃধ্বালী Whether I am right or not, who knows?

रे हिना हिना ध्येद दस सेद दस दस देश गुँउ सेर।

Whether it is correct or-not; I do not know.

कर-प्रान्त्र ऑप्टाइम् के ऑप्टा सुझा चेरा मुनः Whether it will rain or not, who can say?

13. On may be expressed either as explained in clause 7 of this §, or thus:—

मि द्विन्य गुरित्ना नामा नि द्विन्य । Is he hungry or thirsty?

As to the use of Conjunctions with Numerals, see § 26, II, Note 3.

§ 35. THE SUBSTANTIVE VERB W54 To be.

The primary meaning of this verb is To exist, To be present, but it is often used attributively, i.e., as a mere copula to connect subject and attribute, and also as an auxiliary to other verbs.

As a substantive verb and when used attributively it may be conjugated thus:-

PRESENT INDICATIVE

Affirmative.

| ८.४५.३.छूर। | am here. | दर्ज पर्ने उ [.] चेर् | We are here. |
|---|----------------|---|----------------|
| मिन्दिन अपिन or | Thou art here. | हिंदि विदेश के विदेश | You are here. |
| ৭নুশা শিন্বী ড শৌন, ০ |) | ~~ ~ ~ | |
| ৭5ুদা, or ঐস্থাইব। (pronounced yo'-a-re'). | He is here. | मिर्के परिन्द स्थितः, or पर्नुमाः, or स्थितः सम्देता | They are here. |

There being no difference between the singular and plural constructions, only the singular will henceforth be given.

अर् and त्र्न, connected as above with the third person, may also be used for phrases like There is, There was, There are, There were, Thus :-etc.

मिंदिमारोग दरेदे बदायामद दुदारामा There are thirty huts in this village. W5 1

ॲ्र-४:२५ also may apparently be so used when an emphatic or positive statement is intended. Thus:-

देते य में ब्रेट अमारम स्पेर दारेर दस । Is there snow on that hill or not? व्यन्यसन्त्र। वमारा भेर्द्रायास नेद्रा

No, there is not.

According, however, to Mr. C. A. Bell, ইম্ব্রেই, implies uncertainty.

The future root অঁচ', for all persons, is sometimes used for the present tense, when vagueness or indefiniteness is implied. Thus:—
ইমেন্দ্রিব্দেশ্লিম্প্রের্টিন্দ্রিক্তি

An Intensive form of $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{7}^{-}\mathbb{Z}^{r}$ is $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{7}^{-}\mathbb{Z}^{r}$, similarly conjugated, but not now in use.

An elegant Literary form, not much used however, is:-

পত্ৰপ্ৰ

I am.

मार्दः

Thou art.

सकेश, or मान्य, or सकेशयाधीव। He is.

And the Respectful form is :-

বৰুদাহা

I am.

אבק.

Thou art.

বৰুদাম, or মানে; or বৰুদামান্যামীৰ।

He is.

Negative of W5-11

८ दे उन्हें

I am not there.

र्हित परी उसेत , or से परुषा

Thou art not here.

मिनि देशेद, or सेनि मा, or सिंद He is not here.

Interrogative Form.

দ্রিন্দ্রন্থ।

মিন্দ্রিন্দ্রন্থ।

মিন্দ্রিন্দ্রন্থ।

মিন্দ্রিন্দ্রন্থানার্যা, or বর্ষানার্যা,

অমিন্দ্রন্থানার্যা, or মিন্দ্রন্থানার্যা,

অমিন্দ্রন্থানার্যা, or মিন্দ্র্র্যানার্যা,

মেন্দ্রন্থানার্যানার্যানার্যালা

Attributive.

 正四門記述了!
 I am good.

 預行四門記述了, or 只有門, or 诞行' He is good.

 工子引

In some phrases, like the following, 957 and not 57 is used with the first person; probably because there is really no nominative "I," but the construction is "There is to me."

Moreover, the phrase is conjugated with T, etc. Thus:

८ माट मे ५ तुन्। ८ दनी ५ तुन्। I am cold.

I am ill.

८. क्रियाश की प्रयोग प्र

I am hungry.

I am thirsty.

IMPERFECT INDICATIVE.

This may be formed just like the Present Indicative, the context generally sufficing to show what the tense is. Thus:—

Affirmative.

मिश्वर र वर्ते इ सेर्

I was here yesterday.

मिश्रद्धित्पत्रिक्षेत्, or वतुना

Thou wast here yesterday.

मिसदमित्रै इच्चेंर, or त्रुमा or

He was here yesterday.

ळॅर्यः रेर्।

र्बेन या दासुना दी स्पेत्।

I was rich once.

र्ह्न व हिंद कुना ये व्यदः, or a दुना।

Thou wast rich once.

र्बेन या विधुना विधिन, or तत्ना, or He was rich once.

व्यद्भारी

Apart from contextual indications as above, this tense may also be formed with the aid of the auxiliary verbs 🖏 🛪 and 🖘 🛪 Thus:—

Affirmative.

८ ५ रे उ व्याप्ति ।

I was here.

मिंदिन के स्मिन्य प्रमा, or occa-

Thou wast here.

sionally W577351

দিন্দির অন্থানির, or occasionally He was here.

लर्यायन्त्रा।

Negative.

८.५५.५.५.५.५ (vulgarly अन्) | I was not here.

Thou wast not here.

He was not here.

Attributive.

द्धुनार्येः ॲन्यः येत्। चिन्युनार्ये ॲन्यः येन्।

मिं सुनारा व्याप्तरा

I was rich.

Thou wast rich.

He was rich.

Interrogative.

८.८५.४.१ के भूषा । के भूषा । Was I here?

ট্রিন্রিউন্নিন্র (or ঘ্রা Wast thou here? or ঘা), or অন্যাধীরক্ষা (or ঘ্রা, or ঘা)

শিবেনী হার্মার বার্মার (or নামার Was he here? or না)।

And so forth.

PERFECT AND PLUPERFECT INDICATIVE.

Same as the Imperfect Indicative. Thus:—

মুর্মান্মর্ট্র স্মৃত্। I have, or had, been here before.

And so forth, throughout all constructions.

FUTURE.

The Future Simple is expressed Colloquially by WC for all persons.

Thus:—

Affirmative.

I shall be here.

95

५९% ऑर

Thou wilt be here.

He will be here.

Attributive.

רַשִּקְיּבְי, or, in Literature, I shall be good.

च≡र:ग्रॅर.पर्चीर.रू ।

ট্রিম্বাইন্সেন, or, in Literature, Thou wilt be good.

च बटा सूर प्रशीर रू।

নিম্নান্তি, or, in Literature, He will be good.
বল্লেন্স্ন্

N.B.—5 or 57 in Literary Tibetan should not be used as a mere copula to connect subject and attribute, nor should it be used substantively, but only as an auxiliary to verbs.

Negative (Col.).

प्तर्रे उसे थेंद्र।

I shall not be here.

टलचीरा शुल्टा।

I shall not be good.

And so throughout, inserting & before WT'

Interrogative (Col.).

८.५१.३.लूट.८म.

Shall I be here?

८.लची.च्.लूट.टश.

or অ도도시 | Shall I be good ?

E'A7 3'À'-WE'EA

Shall I not be here?

८.लचे.च्.श्र.ल्ट.टश.

Shall I not be good?

And so throughout. Also with IN, or IN Thus:—

Shall I be good?

The other tenses (which really represent the Conditional) are as follows:—

TYPE THE WOULd be here.

I would be here.

Thou wouldst be here.

TYPE THE WOULd be here.

TYPE THE WOULd be here.

TYPE THE WOULd have been here.

TYPE THE Would have been here.

THE TYPE THE WOULd have been here.

THE WOULD have been here.

He would have been here.

He would have been here.

Literary.

८.५१.२.जूर.चर.५वीर.र्

I shall be here.

And so for all persons.

८.४५.२.स्.मीर.त.सूर्यात्रुच्या

I would be here.

हिंत्यते उत्पार्यसम्बर्धाय वर्षामानः,

Thou wouldst be here.

or 353

बिंद १२५ ७ व्या स्ट्रा स्ट्रा

He would be here.

or दर्नामा

८.४५.३.७५.४४.मी४.४.छ्रे.५.५।

I would have been here.

हिंदिन के अपने स्थान के स्था के स्थान के स्थान के स्थान के स्थान के स्थान के स्थान के स्थान

Thou wouldst have been here.

विंद्र प्रदेश के प्रत्य के किंद्र क

He would have been here.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Phrases like If I am, If I be, Should I be ...then....I will or would be; or, If I were...then....I would be, or would have been, are formed, for the present tense, by using the expression নামান্ত্ৰিত আঁচিত, or নিমান্ত্ৰিত, and then using the future root আঁচিত Thus:—

Attributive Present.

नाभाने राष्ट्रनारी र्थेन न क्रीन से र्थेर।

<u>दासुमार्था व्याप्त (४ श्री</u> द्वार्थेदा।

ट्युम्संदिन्मानःश्चेर्संप्रेटः।

हिंद्युनार्येप्रिंद (or बद्दानाना) हिंद र्गिया ।

If I am, or If I be, or should I be, rich, I will be happy or comfortable.

If thou art, etc., thou wilt be happy.

मिं धुनार्येप्पेर्ज (or त्रुनान) क्विर्यो If he is, etc., he will be happy. लूट.।

etc., for Would be, and W5, or 357, or 35 for Would have been, are used instead of WK; though for Would be WK; may also be used.

েপ্রনামান্ত্র (or বিচ্লার) শ্রীর If I were, or had I been, rich, यें प्रेंद्र या प्रेंद्र or क्षेत्र यें प्रेंद्र or

I would be, or would have been, comfortable.

त्र्ना, or जूरा

हिंदिन देन रिलंदिन (or प्रमान) हिंदि If thou, etc., thou wouldst be, or यें प्रेंद्र'य द्वा, or प्रेंद्र'य देद्र', or श्चेर विषेत्, वर्गा, or द्वारा

wouldst have been, comfortable.

वि धुनार्थि स्पर्न (or ८५नान) श्चिर बॅच्पेन्यरेन्, or बेन्यदन्मा, or क्रीरचेंच्येर, or तर्मा, or दुर।

If he, etc., he would be, or would have been, comfortable.

Negative.

Same construction, but with राइ'द instead of यह द or दहनाद Thus:-

प्युमार्थे से दुन्तु से सिंही किए।

If I am not, etc., I will not be comfortable.

The Literary attributive construction is :-

टायुमार्थि भेरान्य ने प्रस्तु ने देश

If I am rich I shall be happy.

८ धुना र्या अन्तर त्यर मुराय अन्ति। If I were rich I would be happy.

द्युनार्येष्प्रिक्षक्रेन्द्रम्

Had I been rich I would have been happy.

POTENTIAL.

Phrases expressive of ability to be present, or ability to be anything (e.g. good), are rendered with the aid of 멋지다 To be able, or by that and other auxiliaries, added to the root of w5'4'

Present.

८.५२५७ ल्यून or घुन स्टा, or घुन I can be here. गुन्धेव।

ट्रां प्रमार्थे प्रमुवः or बुवः ब्रिवः I can be good. गी-लीब।

हिंद्र'दर्ने'ड'ॲद्र'श्रव', or श्रव'ॲट', Thou canst be here. or श्वाणु रेड्।

मिलमारी भेर घर or घरा भेर He can be good. or धून गुःरेर्।

मा अंदर्मा।

Past.

PROBABILITY.

Phrases expressive of likelihood or probability of being present, or of being anything (e.g., good), are rendered by means of স্টিস্ট্রের with আঁচ, or by means of অব্যাহ্য , or অব্যাহ্য Thus, Colloquially:—

Present.

N.B.— ঊর্দ্রা, অন্মা, and similar expressions are sometimes written অব্দ্রা, অন্মা, etc. The correct form is probably মা, but this is not quite clear

Past.

Similarly with अन्ति Good, instead of 35.5 Here.

Negative.

As regards the phrases in which অব্যাব্য and অব্দান occur, the negative construction is to change these into ইাব্যাব্য or ইাব্দান, or হাব্যাব্যা Ex.:—

८.५५.३.लूट.मी श्रेबरा ५५।

Perhaps I shall not be here.

Literary.

This construction is in \$\sqrt{5}\sqrt{2}\cdot\ To be possible, combined, sometimes with the Verbal Root, but usually with the Infinitive in the Terminative case. Thus:—

다구경 অ도 (or অ도) 최도구 I may be there.
다구경 অ도 대로 (or অ도) 최고 최도구 I may not be there.
다구경 অ도 대로 (or অ도) 최도대 I might be there.

धेव वे।

্রেন্ড ভারত (or আঁর্) খ্রীর্ম I might not be there.

ञेव व

८ दे दे खेर यर (or खेर) श्रेर य खेर रे । ८ दे दे खेर यर (or खेर) श्रेर य खेर । I might have been there.

I might not have been there.

There is also another construction in AALT To calculate, reckon, used thus:—

रे.केर.लुब.धर्माट.।

2 . I

It may be so; I reckon, or guess it is so.

HORTATIVE.

Phrases like Must, Ought, Should (in these senses), Need, Want, etc., to be, are rendered by means of ANT, or perhaps more Colloquially ANT, or by that and other auxiliaries, added to the root of ANT. Thus:—

Present.

Past.

Or (instead of 55, or 357 for all persons.

N.B.—If there is an adverb to show the tense, the Past may be constructed like the Present.

PURPOSIVE.

Phrases like That...may or might be; In order that...may or might be; So that...may or might be; In order to be, etc., are expressed by means of the Infinitive put in the Genitive Case and followed by 55% or, in Literary Tibetan, 355, or 555.

८.५५.४.छूर.सप्ट.५५.४। म्यानस्यान्त्रास्त्रास्त्रा

That I may (or might) be here.

So that he may (or might) be saje.

The Literary construction is to put $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{5}^{*}\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{5}^{*}$ in the Terminative Case followed by \mathfrak{F}_{5}^{*} or $\mathfrak{F}_{5}^{*}\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{5}^{*}$ in the Genitive Case, and winding up with \mathfrak{F}_{5}^{*} . Thus:—

다짜도되다 (or 5'의) 축결자 That I may or might exist.

Or the construction may be in AATA put in the Genitive Case and followed by 35. Thus:—

रे र्या बस्स उर् यहिना र त्युर प्रते That they may all be one (John xvii, 21).

IMPERATIVE.

অহিমা does not seem to possess any Imperative Root of its own.

Regarded as a substantive verb, its Imperative would perhaps best be expressed, as in Literary Tibetan, by $\widetilde{\mathsf{W}}_{5}$ ' W_{5} ' $\mathsf{W$

केषान्तुरावादरी उप्पेरायरामुरा,

Be here at midday.

or मुर हेम।

Such an expression, however, would probably never be used in fact. A Tibetan would ordinarily say:—

If the idea of origination, or becoming, be implied, the proper Imperative would probably be 55. Negative 3.35.

Colloquially the Imperative of 374, or, more elegantly, 3754 or respectfully 4574 To make, To do, To act, might be brought into requisition. Thus:—

গ্রীব্রামান্ত্র উর্বিশ্বালী (or better Be here at midday; i.e., Make to be here, etc.

 $(N.B.-\hat{\mathbb{S}}^{\mathbb{N}})$ is vulgar Colloquial. $\hat{\mathbb{S}}^{\mathbb{N}}$ is sometimes used instead of $\mathbb{S}^{\mathbb{N}}$, but $\mathbb{S}^{\mathbb{N}}$ seems more correct.)

Negative:-

१९४८ मिन अप के कि के कि कि कि कि Midday.

यामग्रीतः, or सेन्यासहित्।

Note that in *prohibitions* the Imperative takes the Present Root of the verb.

When used attributively the Imperative of 전기기 is, in the Colloquial, formed with the auxiliary verbs 출기기, 되한기기 and 위투기기 just mentioned. Thus:—

अर्गेजिश्वास ने करें, or मुक्त , or सिंह | Be quick.

Negatively:-

지경 집 (or 리큅스, or 워턴스) | Or:— Do not be late. 경 집 자리 (or 리큅스, or 워턴스) |

Another way, which, however, is rather Hortative than Imperative, is to use the auxiliary verb ্রন্থিত In this case, there being no real

Imperative root, and what is said being only a statement of fact and not a command, the negative A, instead of A, is used. Thus:—

बिन्दिं निक्षा

Do not be afraid. Literally, Fearing, or fear, is not necessary.

This also, however, may be expressed in the usual way. Thus:—

(লিব্যাসান্ত্রীর (or মামান্ত্রীর or মামার্রি) Do not fear; i.e., Do not make fear.

or মাল্বিমান্ত্রীর |

The enclitic particles $\Im \Pi$ (after final Π , \Im or Π , and after anything in the Colloquial), $\Im \Pi$ (after all vowels, or after final Π , \Im , Π , Π , or Π), and $\Im \Pi$ (after final Π), are only used for peremptory orders and stern commands. Ordinarily they are omitted. Even then the order is softened in various ways, e.g. by using the polite expression $\Im \Pi$ $\Im \Pi$, or the still politer one $\Im \Pi$ Π Π Π Π Please. Thus:—

चर्षेत्रचर्षेत्रमाबदः रूपोश्चाचिदः।

Please be careful.

क्षेट हे सेर्यं सं मेर्डिर रेमाश मेर्

Please do not be cruel.

When addressing equals or inferiors familiarly, the following constructions may be adopted:—

अर्गुमाश्रार्था निर्मात्र । वर्षा क्षेत्र क्षेत्र क्षेत्र ।

Now then, be quick; or Do be quick.

Do be punctual.

A more Literary form would be:-

शुभशःमोश्.चर.मीर.कुमालाट.।

Now, do be comforted.

PRECATIVE.

This is formed with the aid of Literary ξ^{η} or Colloquial $\eta \xi^{\eta}$ (the Perfect Root), Imperatives of the verb $\eta \xi^{\eta} \zeta^{\eta}$ To allow, added in Colloquial to the Root, or, in Literature, to the Terminative case of the Infinitive.

Thus :-

८.२८.च्.लूर.चक्रम।

८.२८.र्ग.ल्र्य.च्या.क्या।

८.२८.स्.लूर.चढ्चा. (कुचा.) र्चाका.मावट.

or रेम्ब्स-ग्रेन्।

८ ५८ से स्पूर्य वहमा (हमा) ५८ ।

८.२८.स.लूर.चळ्चाला।

मिन्दर र्ये ऑन् महुमा

दश हिंद दर ये खेद सब्बा शे खेट

मिंश ८ ५८ में भेर पहना नी रेर यहा,

or पश्चा,लूट.एश।

Let me be first.

Let him be first.

I shall not let thee be first.

Will he let me be first?

Literary.

८.४८.चू.जूर.४४.क्ष्म.कृम। ८.४८.चूर.कृम.कृम।

Let me be first.

Or:—The root of the verb অস্থা may be put in the terminative case, and the auxiliary verb নাম্মান used. Thus:—

८५८चे २५५ मुख्या व

Pray let me be first; I beg you to let me be first.

PERMISSIVE.

This is formed with the aid of ক্র্মান To be allowed. Thus:—

द्यती उर्ध्यत केंगा or केंगा मी स्प्ता मिंति प्रति उर्ध्यत केंगा or केंगा मी प्रतुना मिंति दे प्रति केंगा or केंगा मी प्रतुना

८.४५.१.२.जूर. ह्या.रा.लुब. or क्र्या.श्रूट. ।

I may be here. I am allowed to be here.

Thou art allowed to be here.

He is allowed to be here.

I was allowed to be here.

Interrogatively :-

OPTATIVE.

This is formed with the aid of \widetilde{A}_{1} , the Imperative of \widetilde{W}_{1} .

다 (의) 국장적단 (되) 주위 Oh, or Would, that I were there.

The construction is the same for all persons.

In Literary Tibetan :-

다 (의) 국장교육기자 - Would I were there.

And so for all persons.

INFINITIVE.

অ্র্যা To be present, To exist. Or, attributively, To be anything (e.g., good).

ऑर्'या To have been, etc.

ऑट में (or ऑट मुं) भेदा। To be about to be.

In Literary Tibetan the Infinitive is also ઍર્', but it is often seen in the terminative case, as ઍર્'ಫર' Thus:—

हिन्दिः ... ब्रेंबरा विमार्थिन् यमः (or धेवः

We know that thou art a teacher.

That is, We know thee TO BE a teacher.

Again: -

ট্রিণ্ট্রিষানদার্যুর্জিন্মনা (or জীব্দানা) ব্যবস্থা

Whom makest thou thyself?
Literally, Who thinkest thou that
thou art? That is, Who thinkest
thou thyself TO BE?

Colloquially these would be:-

ট্রিন্-প্রিন্-প্রিন্-প্রিন্-প্রিন্-প্রান্তির (or ত্রিন্-প্রান্ত্র) We know thee to be a teacher.

দ্র্বিশ্রীমান্ত্র্মার্ (or অবিদা) Who thinkest thou thyself to be?
বন্ধমান্ত্রীব্রুশা

Sometimes the plain root is found in Literary Tibetan used in an Infinitive sense. Thus:—

ই' বৃদা দীম দিনি এম দ্বিশ্ব ঠিবি বৃদ্ধ They supposing him to be (have been, or that he was) in the company (Luke ii. 44).

Where mandatory Imperative verbs like *Tell*, or *Order*, govern (in English) an Infinitive, the proper way of rendering the phrase in Tibetan is to turn the Infinitive into an Imperative. Thus:—

मिल मुँच मानुरायन।

Tell him not to be late.

मिं के वा का वादा या परे द जिंगा हैना Order them to be here at dawn.

यग

PARTICIPLES.

મેં માં having only one root, the Present and Past Participles are the same and exactly like the Infinitive. Thus:—

ᢅᢍᡪᢅ᠊ᢈᠯ Being; ᢅᢍᢌᠮᢩᠵᢅᡆ Been

The Compound Perfect Participle is W5 4 Ward Having been.

In Colloquial the Future Participle is WITH or WITH About to be.

PERIPHRASTIC PARTICIPLE:

In the Colloquial this is \widetilde{W}_{5} \widetilde{W}_{5} for animates, and \widetilde{W}_{5} for inanimates, the former meaning who is, or was, or which is or was, and the latter which is, or was. It is really used as a kind of adjective.

EXAMPLES :-

E. A. मिर्भिन हो दूर हो स्पेर् साम्बर हिना । I want a servant who is honest

5'95' हैं त्य' प्यें न' स्थानक विमा ने र । चिंत गी मी हैं ये से त' स्थाविमा ने र ।

This horse is a fleet one (one that is fleet).

Your knife is a blunt one.

The Past is similarly constructed. Thus:-

L'A'न्यिन में ह्वन A'र्ट में प्रिन स्वापन हैं। I want the servant who was honest.

The Future may be constructed like the Present. Thus:—

েমে নার্মনার ব্রাম্মন ব্রামন ব্রামন ব্রামন ব্রামন ক্রামন ক্রামন

Or thus :-

ट. भ. मार्थमा सं रूट संसुन् अपन हिमा

Ditto.

न्मेंश।

Or :-

ट.प.र्ट. मु. लूट. मीं पूर. (or लूट. मूं दे.)

Ditto.

मार्थिमा चा लिमा नमिला

In Literary Tibetan the Present Participle is also $\widetilde{\forall} \widetilde{\gamma} \widetilde{\gamma}$ or other variant of the verb To be.

EXAMPLES:-

ট্রিং বিমের বিমের ক্রামানা I speak to you who are in this room.

े पर्वेट्ट्रा पर्वेट्ट्रा पर्वेट्ट्रा

And whatsoever is (that which is) more than this is of the evil one (Matt v. 37).

रुष्य। रुष्यः। रुष्यःयः सम्बद्धः स्ट्रास्यः महिः संदित्तः स्मित्रः सद्धेनाः गुबः रुपदः सूर्यः स्ट्रास्यः सः रुदः। रुष्यः स्ट्रास्यः ।

Holy, holy, holy, Lord God, Almighty, which was and which is (Rev. iv. 8).

द्यार्ते ...र् क्षेत्रकेशय द्यार्थे के । इदार्वे स्वरादमुर याधे के वि

I am....which is, and which was, and which is to come.

As the above examples show, the Past construction is similar, the context giving the tense.

The Literary Future for the Periphrastic Participle follows the lines of the Colloquial.

OTHER LITERARY PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

Present.

 \widetilde{W}_{7} $\widehat{\varsigma}$ \widehat{S}_{5} \widehat{E} \widehat{S}_{5} $\widehat{S}_{$

พีร ผลิ ัส A the time of being: when, while ... is, are.

ऄॅ5'इ' In or by being; if, when . . is, are.

WT'A' Being.

ऄॅ5 गुँश Though, since, because . . is, are.

พีรุ นลิ ซิสรู or รัสรู For being.

Past.

র্মির-রি সির্বিশ্বরা Having been; as, since, when, after...was, were.

র্মির্নাম Because, since, when ... was, were ; Having been

মৃত্বামেষ After, since, because, when ... was, were.

মিন্দ In or by having been; if, when ... was, were.

স্বিদ্ধানু Having been; as, since, when, after...was, were.

OTHER COLLOQUIAL PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

Present.

₩5'55 As, since, because, etc.,...is, are.

At the time of being; when, while...is, are. चेंद्र'सदे'द्राय

चेंद्र In or by being; if, when ... is, are.

ळॅर्भ. Being.

 \widetilde{W}_{5} \widetilde{A}_{5} \widetilde{A}_{5}

Past.

ॲर्'यश

স্থিত্ব'ব্দ Because, since, when, after, as ... was, were.

SUPINE.

This is formed in Literature by putting the Infinitive in the Terminative case. Thus, ४५५५ To be. Or it may be formed by putting the Root in the same case. Thus $\mathring{\nabla}_{5}$ To be.

In Colloquial the supines are $\sqrt[4]{7}$, and $\sqrt[4]{5}$

Verbal Noun.

In Literary Tibetan 454 To be, is often seen turned into a Gerund, or Verbal Noun, by the addition of the Definite Article हैं, or कैं, or sometimes both. Thus ऑन्यादें, ऑन्याकें, ऑन्यादेंके The being.

EXAMPLE:-

मार्ड में। इरमाय देखां वित्र व्यक्त व्यम या **५**५मा

Master, it is good for us to be here. Literally, The being here is good (Matt. xvii. 4).

The Colloquial Verbal Noun is simply the Infinitive with or without 5

EXAMPLE:-

র্মর্ম্ম। এই এই এই এই এই এই (ই) অন্ত Lord, the being here is good for us. यं रेरा

THE VERB 'TO HAVE.' § 36.

Like the Latin MIHI EST, or the Russian U MENYA YEST, There is to me, this verb in Tibetan is merely an adaptation of the Substantive Verb 🗓 To be, with the subject put in the dative. But whereas, in Latin and Russian, this construction is only an alternative one, in Tibetan it is the only idiom used.

EXAMPLES :-

८.ज.ल.भ.लूर।

E' प्राप्त स्थान

ब्रॅब्स्यारायां की करवा पेरि ।

लट्टरानेयाम्यार्चाकीर्पटा

I have a mother.

I have not a father.

Once I had a gun.

That country will not have a king.

And so throughout the conjugation.

PERIPHRASTIC PARTICIPLE.

EXAMPLES:-

हे व्यर्गार अरा

<u> छिंदः या ज्यादे 'ददः यादे ।</u> Bॅर्स केंद्र या केंद्र यदि दर या दे। मिन्याचेन क्षेत्र क्षेत्र स्वारी। श्रामार्थेर याते। स्यामारी

The faith which thou hast.

The faith which thou hadst.

The faith which thou wilt have.

He that hath.

(Matt. xxv.

He that hath not.

Even that which he hath (ib.).

\$ 37. भेज To BE.

Like W5'4' this verb is used to express direct affirmation, or, with a negative particle, direct negation, and also to connect any subject with its attribute. It cannot, however, like w54, be used to express presence, or existence, or the idea of possession. In other words, though অচ্মত may be employed in every case in which অক্স is used, yet অব্যা never takes the place of অচ্'ব।

It may be conjugated thus:-

PRESENT INDICATIVE.

Affirmative.

ट.लचा.च्य.लुब। I am good. हिंदिलमार्थे दर्मा, or occasionally देद Very rarely 🖏५ শিশিশামিনি Or, occasionally:— मिल्यासित्ना or very rarely धेरा Literary Tibetan. ヒ、コヨヒ、ガ、ぬる。る」 I am good.

हिर्य≡र से दर्मामें।

Or occasionally:-

मिर नामर में भेव वे।

मिट प्रज्ञा में भेव के।

Thou art good.

He is good.

The plural being the same as the singular, it is omitted.

Honorific construction in Literary Tibetan:—

(Not used). मिर प्रबद्धा मार्दे। I am good.

Thou art good.

विंद वडद ये त्यम् श शें, or महितें, He is good.

or মদাধানাস্মৰ।

Colloquial Negative.

८ प्रमाद्यां होतु (or vulgarly हातु)। I am not good.

हिंदि अना से के प्रदेश के का के दें। Thou art not good.

মিঁ অনা মাঁ মাই ।

Or occasionally:—

মিঁ অনা মাঁ মী বে বৃদা।

He is not good.

মীব is Literary, and both মীব and মাব Colloquial. Literary or Colloquial it is best to use 5131

Interrogative.

८ अना रा भेत क्या, or भेत यहा Am I good?

or धेंद्रय।

हिंदिलमार्थे दिनामास, or दिनामास। Art thou good?

मिंभमार्थे दे द्रा, or दे द्रायहा,

or 35.21

Is he good?

Or occasionally :--विं अना से त्र्ना नाम, or त्र्ना नाम।

Literary.

ट.च बट हो ज्येब बस्य।

Am I good?

हिर्न्न से प्रेक्षक्म, or त्रृमामा

Art thou good?

मिट.य बट. हा. लेव वस ।

Is he good?

N.B.—If and when, in the Colloquial, Wo is used with the 2nd person, it is generally when a question is being asked. It is hardly ever used in the Colloquial with the 3rd person, though it is not absolutely wrong so to use it.

IMPERFECT INDICATIVE.

Same as Present Indicative, the context generally showing what that tense is. Thus:-

In Literary Tibetan the construction is similar, but of course the *Literary* forms of the verb must be used.

Another method is similarly to rely on the context for the tense, and to use \(\tilde{\mathbb{U}}\superstack{\tilde{\mathbb{U}}}\superstack{\tilde{\mathbb{

The Literary form of this construction would be $\widetilde{W}_{1}^{-}\widetilde{W}_{1}^{-}$ for all persons, preceded by \widetilde{W}_{1}^{-} , or other indication of tense; and $\widetilde{W}_{1}^{-}\widetilde{W}_{1}^{-}$ would replace $\widetilde{W}_{1}^{-}\widetilde{W}_{1}^{-}$

PERFECT AND PLUPERFECT INDICATIVE.

Same as Imperfect. Thus:-

क्वॅब-भार-प्यनारी भैत्।

শ্বাম্ব্ৰ I have, or had, been good.

And so forth, throughout all constructions.

FUTURE.

Same as in \(\overline{\pi}\supersizer\), i.e. expressed by \(\overline{\pi}\supersizer\) for all persons.

The Literary construction is:—

| ८:इ.स्र.पंचीर.ह्र। | I shall be a shepherd. |
|------------------------------------|--------------------------|
| ष्टि र हे चेंद्र त्युर दें। | Thou wilt be a shepherd. |
| ब्रिट:है:च्रूर:प्रशुर:रू। | He will be a shepherd. |
| ८ सर मुर संभित ते । | I shall have been |
| ष्ट्रिन् : सरम्बुरस्य ५ नुनाने । | Thou wilt have been |
| मिंद्र यर मुर य जिन ने । | He will have been |

When ঊর্ম' is used as an auxiliary to other verbs, we shall find that in the Colloquial there is another Future construction, namely, "ম্মির' for the 1st person, and "ম্মির' for the 2nd and 3rd persons.

SUBJUNCTIVE OR CONDITIONAL.

Same as in $\widetilde{W}_{\overline{1}}$, substituting $\widetilde{W}_{\overline{1}}$ for $\widetilde{W}_{\overline{1}}$ or $\widetilde{N}_{\overline{1}}$, wherever they occur, and, in the negative forms, $\widetilde{N}_{\overline{1}}$ or $\widetilde{N}_{\overline{1}}$, in the first part of the sentence, but keeping the second part as it stands there. Thus:—

Present.

<u>राष्ट्रमार्थे भेताता क्षेत्राया भेरा ।</u>

If I be rich, I shall be happy.

Past.

ट्युमायें भेरतस्भुत्रायः भेर

If I were rich, or had been rich,
I would be or would have been
happy.

The Literary construction is :-

८:युनार्याध्येष्ठाव प्रेने प्रमास्य प्रमास्य । ८:युनार्याध्येष्ठाव प्रमास्य प्रमास्य ।

If I am rich I shall be happy.

If I were rich I would be happy.

ଅଧୁନାଧି ଓ ବ୍ୟୁ ସ୍ୱ ସ୍ଥାନ ସ୍ଥାନ ବ୍ୟୁ । Had I been rich I would have been happy.

POTENTIAL.

Same as in অবিম, substituting অবি for the অবি to which বুব s annexed. Thus:—

Present.

ा श्वा भेता हुन का श्वा भेता है।

Past.

ट.लचा.ग्र.लुब.बैंच.च.लुब।

I could be good.

Perfect.

ट.लमा.च्.लूब.बैच.च.लूर।

I could have been good.

Or :--

लमार्ग्राज्येब मुदार्शेट । (for all persons)

LIKELIHOOD.

The construction is the same as in \(\overline{\pi_5} \). Thus :—

माडेमा छेर दार खुमा से खेट , or दासुमा ।

I may possibly be rich.

HORTATIVE.

Same construction as in W53, changing W5 into W5 Thus:

Present.

ट्राप्यमारी प्रेक् नुमें है।

I must be good.

Past.

ट.लमा.च्.लूब.रम्ब्स.वैट.।

I ought to have been good.

PURPOSIVE.

Same as in W5'4', changing W5' into W5' Thus:

ट पर्दन ये भेन परि देन या।

In order that I may be, or might be, safe.

The Literary construction is in AATA or WATA put in the genitive case and followed by

EXAMPLE :--

IMPERATIVE.

Literary.

भ्र.लुब.तर.चीर. (धुना)। यवट.तूर.चीर. (धुना)।

Be good.

Be a man.

Colloquially.

As stated under 45.41

PRECATIVE.

Same construction as in W5'7', changing W5' into W5'. Thus:-

ে শ্ব. প্র. পূথ. বাস্থিন। \ ম. শ্ব. প্র. পূথ. বাস্থিন। \

Let me be a lama

PERMISSIVE

OPTATIVE.

Same as in ঊত্তা, changing ঊত্তা into ঊত্ত Thus:—
েহমেলুলার্মিউর (মা) বিলা। Would I were rich.

Literary.

ट.र्युना:र्ये:श्रेष:सर:ग्रुर।

Would I were rich.

INFINITIVE.

ঊর্বা To be. In Literary Tibetan it is the same.

लॅर्नाय जेन्य।

To have been.

लटम् (or लटम्) भेरना

To be about to be (Coll.).

श्रेष्र-यर-दिम्दिन्य।

ल्राःची. (or ल्राःची.) लुधेना

 $rac{To be about to be (Lit.).}{}$

EXAMPLES :-

र भे तरी मा तर्स केन ये जिन य से सा

Now, consider (see) how great this man was (to be).

In Literary Tibetan:

५ से ५६ हे रहा हेन से धेन पर ख़ेंस विमा

Ditto.

चेशास्त्राचेशामश्रमश्रम्। स्रोत्तर्भित्तः भेरा प्रते हिना स्रोतः स्रोतः

This man, if he were a prophet, would have perceived who and what manner of woman this is which toucheth him, that she is (to be) a sinner. (Luke vii. 39.)

विस्ति निष्ट विशेषात् । वास्त्रियाः विशेषा I know that his commandment is (to be) life eternal.

हिंद्र-गुरा-मरासु प्रीत्र-या-मस्मा

Or, in Literary Tibetan:—

हिन् कुंशर दासु क्षेत्र यर वसम्

Who thinkest thou that thou art, or thyself to be?

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT:

लेबरा.

Being

PAST :

जेदयः

Been

COMPOUND PERFECT:

অ্ব্যাম্ব্য Having been { (both in Coll. and

Lit.).

FUTURE:

ल्लाम् ज्याम्

About to be

PERIPHRASTIC.

Both in Colloquial and Literary Tibetan, Present and Past Tenses, this is :-

धेवया, or धेवयारे।

Who or which am, is or was.

EXAMPLES .-

स्वास्येदयादेश्वरावर द्वीर।

A remnant (that which is a remnant) shall be saved. (Rom. ix. 27.)

मिन् रदानी धेव दाने सबिका विमा।

Take that which is thine own. (Matt. xxv. 25.)

५.६.चत.स. हिर् समझ ही इर छर यहे नुसासु नुसद न प्रेन य नुष्टा ह सेन यते नुसासु मिन गु सुनास सु सुनिसास उन प्येन या दे रदा मीहा।

Now, I, Paul, myself, who in your presence am lowly among you, but being absent am of good courage toward you. (2 Cor. x.

विराष्ट्रीयाधिकाया इससाया मानुसा वेरारी।

I speak to you that are gentiles. (Rom. xi. 13.)

दिने त्यद्या साधीब याने तादि त्यद्या I will call them my people which ५८. मोड्रश. यासा श्रीत या दे या मोड्रश या

were not my people; and her my beloved which was not beloved. (Rom. ix. 25.)

ヨイ・ロエ・スター

The Future Periphrastic Participle both in Colloquial and Literary Tibetan, follows the lines of W5'71

OTHER PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

LITERARY.

Present.

শ্বর-দ্বিদ শ্বর-দ্বিদ শ্বর-দ্বি-ক্রিন্স শ্বর-দ্বি-কুমান

ઝોવ.વ.

लेब.ज.

প্রব-দীপ্র

लुब्दादे.

Being; as, since, when, after, while . . . am, is, are.

At the time of being; when, while \dots am, is, are.

In or by being; If, when . . . am, is, are.

Being.

Though, since, because . . . am, is, are.

Of or for being.

Past.

ত্রুবান্যান্য প্রবিশ্বর প্রবিশ্বর প্রবিশ্বর

थेव रात्र

धेवन

Having been; As, since, when, after . . . was, were.

Because, since, when . . . was, were; Having been.

As, when . . . was, were.

In or by being; If, when . . . was, were.

COLLOQUIAL.

धेव-पृत्रः धेव-पि: पृत्रः त्यः र्डाः, or धेव-र्डाः

धेवव

लुब.घड. लुब.घड.

Present.

At the time of being; When, while . . . am, is, are.

Being; because, since, as, when . . . am, is, are.

In or by being; If, when . . . am, is, are.

Of or for being.

Being.

Past.

তিব্বাহা Because, since, when, after, as . . . was, were; having been.

র্মার Having been; as, since, when, after . . . was, were.

ত্মীব্যান্ত্ৰ Of or for having been.

অব্যামম As, since, when, after . . . was, were.

অবি'ব'র্' As, when . . . was, were.

র্মার In or by having been; If, when . . . was, were.

Supine.

Literary: ৠব্রার, and ৠব্র To be.

Colloquial: অর্ম, and অর্দ্র To be.

Verbal Noun.

Either $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}\widetilde{\mathbf{J}}^{\mathsf{T}}$ Being, To be, or the Infinitive of the verb, which in itself includes the idea of To be. It may either be used alone, or, in the Colloquial, with $\widetilde{\mathbf{J}}^{\mathsf{T}}$, or in Literary Tibetan $\widetilde{\mathbf{J}}^{\mathsf{T}}$, or $\widetilde{\mathbf{J}}^{\mathsf{T}}$

EXAMPLES:-

ক্রুমে'ন্ট' ন্ত্রিম্'মির'ন (र्रे') মর্ক্রমম্য' Sometimes it is not very pleasant to be a king.

スロヨロ (デ) であれる | It is shameful to be drunk.

ঈ শাব্য নেন্দ্রীন্ত্র নির্দানি কি he be as (to be as) his master, and কিন্দ্রের রিন্দ্রের নির্দানি কি he servant as his lord.

(বি) প্রন্দীনের্শ্য

N.B.—It must always be remembered that ����� is never used substantively, but always in connection with some noun, adjective, or verb, into which its forms have to be moulded.

§ 38. THE VERB.

The Tibetan Verb denotes only a sort of in-I.—PRELIMINARY. definite happening or state, and this not of itself, but rather by means of certain auxiliaries, including the verb To be, which alone really constitutes the verb in a Tibetan sentence. Thus:-

श्रृथं मिन श्राप्तर मुश्रा श्रृथं मिन ग्रि परेना। Or প্রেম্বর (or র্মির ন্র্রন্সাম্র শ্রীর) वेंब दिने वस गुंब दिना में।

Literally, this is: By the sower, as regards the seed, a sowing is.

In fact the so-called Verb is rather a kind of Noun, modified in its significations by the verb To be, according to the mood or tense of the latter. It possesses in itself no means whereby to distinguish between the active and passive voices; the singular and plural numbers are alike in construction; and, except as regards the auxiliary To be, all its forms can be used with any of the persons indiscriminately.

The changes or inflections undergone by the Tibetan Verb are effected in three ways:

- 1. By structural alterations in the Root;
- By making use of Auxiliary Verbs;
- 3. By resorting to divers monosyllabic Particles for the formation of Infinitives, Participles, Supines, etc.

II.—Roots.

These in Literary Tibetan are four: -1. Present; 2. Perfect; 3. Future; and 4. Imperative.

Thus:-

75'5' To do, To make, To act.

Present Root: 35 Do, Does, Doing.

Perfect Root: 5N Have or has done.

Future Root: 5 Will do.

Imperative Root: 5N Do.

However, every Tibetan Verb does not possess all four roots. Some only possess three. Thus:—

ব্র্ছিশ্বাম To drop, drip, trickle, leak.

Present Root: aff Drop, Drops, Dropping.

Perfect Root: नाइनाहा, or इनहा Have or has dropped.

Future Root: न्या Will drop.

Some possess only two roots. Thus:-

বৃশুন To go, To walk.

Present and Future Root: AT Goes, Will go.

Perfect and Imperative Root: No. Have or has gone, Go.

A Colloquial Imperative is ক্রুণ Go.

Many possess only one root for all tenses. Thus:-

মর্মিনা To see.

म्बेंगः To remember.

সুব'বা To be able.

র্বিন্য To receive, get, obtain.

ব্দীনান To suit, to agree, to be satisfied.

Where, in Literary Tibetan, a verb possesses a special root for each or any of the different tenses, and for the Imperative Mood, that special root must be used for those tenses and that mood, save that when the Future construction is in AJTT or JT or JT, the Present Root is retained instead of the Future Root. Where there is no special Future root or Imperative root, the Present root is used for the Future and Imperative. It is impossible, of course, to learn the root-forms of all the verbs, but there is no reason why those of the commoner verbs should not be memorized to some extent.

As regards the Colloquial, though it is quite allowable to use the

roots that are assigned to particular moods and tenses for those moods and tenses, yet it is said that as a matter of fact, at least in vulgar Colloquial, this is seldom or never done, and the root generally used is the Perfect root. When, however, the Present root of a verb ends in an inherent W (for instance, Z T to look), or in an inherent G (e.g., TST) To bear, or bring forth), or in (e.g., GT) To request, ask), or in (e.g., ET To live, feed, nourish), it is said that that Present root is generally used for the Present Indicative, the Future Indicative in TWT, or TTT, the Present Participle, Active Present Participle, Present Infinitive, Supine and Verbal Noun. If, in these verbs, the Future is formed with WT instead of TWT etc., the Perfect root (or perhaps more correctly the Future Root) must be used. Thus:—

The above idea that the Perfect Root should be used in the Colloquial probably arises from the fact that it sometimes has the same sound as the Future root. For instance, in the verb \$\square\$5550 To send, the Perfect Root \$\square\$550 and the Future Root \$\square\$555 sound nearly alike.

Of course it must be remembered that the Colloquial, as such, pays no regard to spelling, but only to its own phonetics. Hence, if one

writes Tibetan, one should spell properly. Therefore, also, if one attempts to write Colloquial, as such, it must always look wrong, as regards spelling.

In Compound Honorific verbs the first retains the Present root throughout, e.g., শুবামান্ত্র কিন্তা To provide.

EXAMPLE:-

With all other verbs the vulgar Colloquial, it is said, usually adopts the Perfect root, if any, or at least the sound of it, as above explained, for all moods and tenses. Thus, for \$\sqrt{5}\sqrt{7}\sqrt{7}\sqrt{7}\sqrt{7}\sqrt{7}\sqrt{8}\sqrt{9}\sqrt{1

Present Root: 575 Send, Sends, Sending.

Perfect Root: 555 Have or has sent.

Future Root: 955 Will send.

Imperative Root: $\widetilde{\mathfrak{A}}$ Send.

In Literary Tibetan the Present Indicative is :-

 $\begin{bmatrix}
 4 \\
 4 \\
 \hline
 4 \\$

But in the vulgar Colloquial it is: 드 도착'되5다', or 되5다' I send, and 도착'되5다' (or 되5다') 취'했う' I am sending.

In Literary Tibetan the Future Indicative is expressible in several ways with different roots. Thus:—

There seems also to be an emphatic form in which W is affixed to the Future root, and is followed by 35 for all persons. Thus:—

[I shall send; I am to send, i.e., by me a sending is to be.

III. -AUXILIARY VERBS.

These are ਘੋੜ੍ਹਾੜਾ, ਘੋੜ੍ਹਾੜਾ, ੨ਤ੍ਰਾੜਾ, ੨੨ੑ੨ and other forms of the verb To be, which it is not necessary to specify here; ਸੁਤੜ,

IV .- AUXILIARY PARTICLES.

(1)—Î, Î, Î, Î, Î, Î, Î, annexed to the Verbal Root according to rule, with reference to the final letter of the root (see § 25, iv). Used to connect the root with X, X, X, I or Z, they form a periphrastical Present Tense. For example, in the Colloquial, which loosely uses the sound of the Perfect Root—

CN'75C' | I send.

But :-

মে'ব5ে'নী'ঊব। I am sending, or I send.

Sometimes, in the vulgar Colloquial, they are annexed to the roots of adjectives, taking the place of the adjectival particle $\widetilde{\mathcal{A}}^{r}$, \mathcal{A}^{r} , or \mathcal{A}^{r} . Thus:—

प्रमानुनिन्देन instead of प्रमानुनिर्दिन The road is rough. धुनापनानिन्देन instead of धुनापनार्दिन The child is good.

It is better, however, to use the adjective in full, and not to employ the construction in $\widehat{\eta}$, $\widehat{\underline{\eta}}$ etc.

These Particles are sometimes used at the end of a sentence in the sense of a finite verb, and more particularly in the 1st Person Future.

EXAMPLES:-

মেনেরুদানী I shall put in.

दशःरेनाशः नेर्णे, or मुःष्णे। I shall help.

(2)—河南, 河南, 河南, 城南 These are annexed to the root as Gerunds, and signify By (doing something), or Because, Since, etc., but more usually antithetically as But, Though.

EXAMPLES:-

দেশ্মিমান্ধ্রমান্দ্রমানি র্নিমানি । I called him, but he has gone; or, Though I called him he has gone.

ন্ত্ৰী স্থান্থ ব্যান্থ কি ।

Systanding here we shall see the tamasha.

Tamasha.

It may even be annexed to the root of the verb To be. Thus:—

মি ক্রুমানামান্ত্রীমা

Though it is a good story, or It is a good story but...

When used antithetically a pleonastic (3) 5 sometimes follows—:

মিন্দ্রীমান্ত্রান্ত্রান্ত্রান্ত্রান্ত্রান্ত্রান্তর বিদ্যান্তর বিদ্যান্তর দিন্ত্রান্ত্রান্ত্রান্তর দিন্তর দিন্তর দিন্তর দিন্ত্রান্তর দিন্তর দ

When annexed to the root of an adjective it includes the verb To be. Thus:—

র্ম নাব্রনাম নাব্রনাম = র্মানাব্রনাম Since, Because, or Though (she was, or is) of fine stature.

(3)—দীব, দীব শীব, and ঊবৃ। Annexed to the root. These are Literary forms, and denote the Participle Present. EXAMPLES:-

मिट क्रिन अस दिनमाण्डिन स्वेन या देत्। He went on his way praying.

Used to connect the root with w5, w5, 357 or 35 they form a periphrastical Present Tense, just as भ, भ, etc., do in the Colloquial.

EXAMPLES:-

गे के दिन मीक स्पर। मिंद्र मु: येष गुज य दुग।

Lo, I come (am coming). (Heb.

He is singing.

When connecting the root with 55° Together with, they are often used gerundially.

EXAMPLES:-

महिंद मेन्द्रदा

In, when, or while sending.

ह्यास्त्रनीत्रन्य।

In, etc., singing.

In, etc., doing

दमाँ धेवरदः।

In, etc., going.

Thus :-

मा भेर मीर निर्मा बहा हों र पार्ने पाना In, or when, singing it is best to ज्यादेत्।

stand up.

In the Colloquial this may be rendered :-

वा सेव दशः (or सेव सदे दशः or येव यन्तः । यद्शःवद्याः श्रेन् पाने प्रमा वेंशरेर।

(4). $-\hat{5}$ after final 5

5 after final 5, 5, A, N

মু after final না, ঢা, না, ম and all vowels.

These are a sort of Continuative Particles or Suspensives, and may be annexed to all Present and Perfect roots, but according to rule, with reference to the final letter of the root. Annexed to Present roots they form a Present Participle, or Gerund, and, annexed to Perfect roots, a Past Participle, or Gerund. Thus, they may be rendered... ing, or... ing been, or...ing...ed, or As, when, after, etc. They are Literary rather than Colloquial, though not altogether absent from the latter, and are largely met with in those subordinate clauses a longer or shorter string of which generally goes to the construction of a Tibetan sentence.

EXAMPLES :-

याः त्याद्वात् द्वात् द्वात् व्याप्त व्यापत व्

Pilate and Herod were formerly (formerly having been) at enmity with each other. (Luke (xxiii, 12.)

And seeing the multitudes he, etc. (Matt. v. 1.)

देशश्चाक्ष्य पु. पंचीया. में हु। इ. प्या नेज्ञात्मा क्ष्य पु. प्या श्व. हु, नाप्या And when even was come his disciples went (having gone) down to the sea, etc. (John vi. 16.)

(5)— 3c. after final T, 5, T, or the vowel K

ন্দ after final দ', ব', ম', ম', and all vowels except জি

This Suspensive, which is Literary rather than Colloquial, is annexed to the Root, and expresses in one or other of its forms the Present Participle, but sometimes also the Past Participle. It is also sometimes used instead of the conjunction And. Lastly, it often expresses a causal relationship. It is generally met with at the end of minor interpolations within subordinate clauses.

EXAMPLES:-

মন্ত্রীনাম হাঁ দেন্ত্রীনিম ব্যাহিন্তর (By) Marching quickly the army arrived. अत्राविदाम्बिन्दाः (perfect of त्रेत्रीदाः) वस्राम्बन्दाः (perfect of त्रेत्रीदाः)

(6)—시작 and 기자 [

And Jesus went (having gone) about all the cities and villages. (Matt. ix. 35.)

Being afraid and calling out.

Light not being, air is not; or Light is not and air is not; or Light and air not being; or Without light or air. (Das.)

Lying down, to go to sleep; or To lie down and go to sleep.

The heavens having parted, or rent asunder. (Mark i. 10.)

These are merely the particles $\[mu]$ and $\[mu]$ of the Infinitive, or simple Participle, put in the Instrumental or Modal case. Practically they are equivalent to $\[mu]$, $\[mu]$, and $\[mu]$ and the next noted Suspensive $\[mu]$. They are often used as a variant of these, when the latter have already occurred in the same sentence. This is merely a matter of taste, to avoid repetition. Primarily they mean Because, Since, Seeing that, etc., but they also carry the sense of When, and of the Participle, both Present and Past. Both Literary and Colloquial Tibetan make use of them:—

EXAMPLES:-

ट.स्ट.च्रेश.चर्नश.चर्था

नेन-रु-नगद-मध्येन-ध्या

ट.लुब.तश.भ.पह्नाश.चुना।

देस: श्रे:श्रेंब: ची: श्रुमा श्रेंग र्द्ध: पदे वद्गाणीस पद्म: (perfect of दद्गेयश:या:) श्रेंग्रेंश: वस: ऑर्येंस्य ची: श्रुमा श्रेंग्रेंस: When I looked; i.e., I having looked.

As, since, because it is very difficult; or It being very difficult.

Since it is I, or It being I, or It is I, be not afraid. (Matt. xiv. 27.)

Then Simon's mother-in-law having been seized by a fever-illness and having lain down. (Mark i. 30.) ্টিণ্টিম। দর্ভিমার্সিটেণ্ট্রিমার্স Now, since (or because) ye say, we see. (John ix. 41).

(7)—5N. This Suspensive, both in Literary and Colloquial Tibetan, is annexed to the Perfect root, and expresses a Past signification. Otherwise it has practically the same functions as 5, 5, 5, 5, 1N, and 1N. It means After, or When, and conveys also the idea of the Past Participle.

EXAMPLES:-

मिंद्र-मोश्र-दे-दमात्म। द्वे-स-द्व-सुन् शुःभेत्। वेश-मश्चदशः दशः हिंद्र-मिदः यः सः द्वेत्र-मोश्र-दे-दमात्म। द्वे-स-द्वे-सुन् द्वेत्र-मोश्र-दे-दमात्म। द्वे-स-द्वे-सुन्

He to them, my mother and my brother who is? Thus having said. (Matt. xii. 48, and elsewhere).

When your work is finished you may go home.

मुँदः (ब्रेन्सः मोदेः । सः तमाः च त्रसः दर्शः दर

After eating (having eaten) chhoti hāzirī you must set out.

टायाँ मिल्ने मिल्ने प्रीक्ष क्षा। स्वायाटाई हे स्त्रीटायार्थेन क्षा।

I have been (having been) young.

I was formerly (having formerly been) in Darjeeling.

दः (अ) देशकार्जर।

The tiger had eaten the deer.

The deer has been eaten.

I had gone home.

I had been asked.

र्विमाञ्चित्र वट वटि सुर में सावसाय नुमा।

In the roll-book it is (has been) written of me. (Heb. x. 7).

(8)—AN. This particle has (perhaps) sometimes a Present but more often a Past signification, and is always found attached to the simple Participle in J. or J. It means From; or When...ed;

or Being...ed; or Having been; or As or While, followed by a Past tense; or As or While, followed by a Present Participle (in which case the root of the verb is often repeated, the particle \mathbb{N}^* or \mathbb{N}^* coming next, and then the \mathbb{N}^*); or When on the point of; When about to; When going to; Being about to, or on the point of, when used with \mathbb{N}^* or \mathbb{N}^* or \mathbb{N}^*

EXAMPLES :-

रे.रेच.चीश.मूट्.ज.लट.वश.लट.रे.च्यांच. ४५.वेच.चीश.मूट्.ज.लट.वश.लट.रे.च्यांच.

रे वशामिट सर सेवश रा भशा

रे. वशः मि.श्रांटः वशः तीयः रेते. प्रिशः यरमाः क्रमान्द्रः पर्मोमाश्रावशः यहान् स्यायशः ।

हेंब्यायस। हेंब्यायस।

म्ट्रिम्बर्र-२.१८.यग्रे-मश्चिरश्र-सायश्र

रेर्माश्रें प्राथश

3.चोरश.रेशश.पोट.श्र्ट.च.जश।

रेट्रे कें में महेश विद या पर पासश

พ८२.२म.मुझ.इ.स.६.२५.२८. भरा

દુર્વુ દ્વાપકા નાકુશ પશ 2. હૈનોશ પશ તીળ હુનો ટે. જન્મું માત્ર કે. નાયજ ૧૧૧૧ છે. યુદ્દ વશ When they continued asking, i.e., again and again asked, him. (John viii. 7).

Thereupon as he passed by. (John ix. 1).

And he, having gone, and having associated with a householder of that country, after having settled. (Luke xv. 15).

Then Jesus, having begun again to teach by the seaside. (Mark iv. 1).

And while he yet spake. (Matt. xxvi. 47).

When they were going (As they went). (Matt. xxviii. 11).

And the disciples as they went. (Mark ii. 23).

There shall two men be in the field, i.e. while being. (Matt. xxiv. 40).

And they stoned Stephen; or As or while they stoned, or were stoning Stephen. (Acts vii. 59).

After that, two of his disciples, having set out on a journey, as they were going to a country.

(Mark xvi. 12).

थट दे द्वायम थ सेंट सेंट न यस

याम्बिमामीसार्चे मान्सा चुन् हिमामिसा

বুল ক্রম প্রাম্ম ব্যাদ্র বি নার্কর বি নার্কর

And as they went on their way. (Acts viii. 36).

And while they, thus conversing, questioned each other. (Acts xxiv. 15).

And Saul, yet breathing out threatenings and slaughter against the Lord's disciples. (Acts ix. 1).

And when Paul was now about to open his mouth. (Acts xviii. 14).

And should have been killed, i.e., being about to be, or on the point of being killed. (Acts xxiii. 27).

(9)—5. This is expressive of condition, hypothesis, contingency and even doubt, and may be rendered by If, When, On, Since, As, Should, Had, Were, etc. It is generally added to the Root, but sometimes (though not often) to the Infinitive, and is much used at the end of verbal phrases both in the Colloquial and in the written language. Sometimes the phrase which it concludes is introduced by the expression $\pi\pi$

Examples of its use with the Root are given under ४५५% (§ 35), and ३४५%। (§ 37).

5 is also used in Literary Tibetan, adversatively, to express Though, Although. Thus:—

র্বী মূল্ অন্ত্রি আনুনা আনুনা । Although he was formerly a transgressor. (Das.)

It also expresses the idea of Reason for, or Causality. Thus:—

AFWTTAF GTI

(Das.)

मे प्यन्तन्तु मनुहरः। राभाममेरिकान्तु मानिकान्त्रे मि

Since fire existed, smoke arose. (Das.)

(On) seeing me the thief fled.

Used with বৃসা it expresses When, or If and when. Thus:—

वसारादम् व।

If and when, or when, I go. (Das.)

ৰ্ম'ৰ্ম'ম'ন্ননৰ।

If and when, or when the time comes, i.e., it comes down to the time. (Das.)

(10)—A. Annexed to the Participle, this Suspensive may mean To, At, In; With respect, regard, or reference to; Concerning: Relative to: In consequence of.

EXAMPLES:-

मार्केन्-सं-सं-दमादः न।

To rejoice in killing. (Jäschke.)

ह्रमायायद्भारा।

To shrink from, or be afraid of (i.e., with respect to) sinning. (Das.)

Annexed to the Root, it may be used for the Present Participle in a minor phrase, much like 35 and its variants. Thus:—

यद्गा वहेंब हेंबा हिंदा प्राप्त प्राप्त प्राप्त Denying himself and taking up his cross.

It is also often used like $\hat{\xi}$, $\hat{\xi}$, but annexed to the Participle, and meaning As.

EXAMPLES:-

झ हेन लेगा ॲन याय।

As there is (was) an idol shrine. (Das.)

मुत्यः वी केन रे मलेन पु रेर हिस प्रेर्पुः देनीयाया

As the king goes there daily to bathe.

बह्मा हेन मुँ ना न में में दिए माया

As it does not occur in the world. (Jäschke.)

Annexed to the Root, it is used adversatively for Though, Although.

EXAMPLE:-

म्राकंत्राभाष्ट्राचिरा

Though looking, he did not see.

Annexed to the Repeated Root, it expresses While, Whilst.

EXAMPLE:-

দেশব্দীকে দেশ নিমা (মাদা) প্রমা Whilst I am reading this book note down what I say.

When annexed to adjectives, A includes the idea of the verb To be, being indeed an abbreviation of A Being, and seems to have the force of And, or But, according to circumstances.

EXAMPLES:-

해구다[편꽃] 회구·대구다리 |

लिस.मु.सैचा.१८.सेट.ज.रचेटस.सेथ.त।

भ्रास्त्रनात्मास्यात्मेदाः स्वानात्मास्यात्मेद्देशः य । त्रितसात्मेनासाः भीदाः स्वानास्यास्यासेद्देशः य । Hair and beard being yellow and long. (Das.)

Being ugly as to his body and of small stature and (or but) having a fine voice. (Das.)

Being ugly and short. (Jäschke.)

Being of good figure, nice to look at, and pretty.

In double Imperative or Precative expressions, \mathbb{A}^* has the force of the Present Participle, or of And, and is annexed to the root of the first verb.

EXAMPLES:-

जूना य हुं श जैना।

र्'येट'यार्द्धर वेन।

1.음.너도함.너.너구,오.선회1

यीचातार्ड्स । श्राम्यार्ड्स श्रीमा। Come and see (coming, see).

Now, rise and come hither (rising, come hither).

Go and look (going, look).

In sentences like the following, where our Supine means In order to, or For the purpose of, Q, annexed to the verbal Root, is used Supinally both in Literary Tibetan and in the Colloquial.

EXAMPLES:-

वे वटा ज्ञायात में मुं प्येत।

Well, I am going to dine.

धुनु हिंद रद में भिनो विद्या श्लेषश The boy has come to get your letter.

(11)一項。

When connecting a verbal root with the auxiliary verb $\sqrt[3]{5}$, or $\sqrt[3]{5}$, this particle forms, in modern Literary Tibetan, a Future tense which is practically a kind of periphrastic conjugation of $\sqrt[3]{5}$ (as a Future Participle, *About to*) with the auxiliary verb.

EXAMPLES:-

ट.ब्रॅट.च्युं.लुब्रा

I shall come; I am about to come.

मिंद्र माश्चद मुं अ दे ।

He will not speak; He is not about to speak.

It is also used in older Literary Tibetan to express necessity, obligation, expediency.

EXAMPLES:-

ट.प्ट.क्रि.लुब.बस।

Am I to come? Must I come?

विद्यानीशं इंत्यानुद्यानुं सेव।

He ought not to beat the horse.

८.ज.पंत्री के शर राज्यरा

I have many things to write.

In the Colloquial \$\overline{\sigma}\$, annexed to the verbal Root, is extensively used for the Infinitive.

EXAMPLES:-

दने उत्त्रीं कु के वर्ते।

I do not wish to go there.

मिट सञ्जीन साथा पर्ने कुंगा हैं र स्पेर।

How far have we to walk to reach home?

हिंद्र-माट-स्वरक्तुं स्थिद्। स्र-दश्च-स्वरक्तुं स्थिद् स्र-दश्च-स्वरक्तुं स्थिद् स्र-दश्च-स्वरक्तुं स्थिद्द स्र-दश्च-स्वरक्तुं स्थिद्द स्र-दश्च-स्वरक्तुं स्थिद्द स्र-दश्च-स्वरक्तुं स्थिद्द स्र-दश्च-स्वरक्तुं स्थिद्द स्र-दश्च-स्वरक्तुं स्थिद्दे

What have you to say?

There is nothing at all to say.

Be pleased to rise.

Is there any sport (game) to be got here?

I do not wish to be there.

In the Colloquial this particle, with or without the 35, is also extensively used, annexed to the Verbal Root, to express what correspond to our Verbal Nouns in ing, i.e. the Latin Gerund.

EXAMPLES:—

र्वेद्यासिनाया (८९) नःडटःसर्नाः दर्वेद्यासिनायाः

It is very confusing to read the Literary language: The reading of the Literary language, etc.

नमयाम्बर्गाः (तर्ने) नखरादम्याः नमाम

It is very wrong to tell lies: The telling lies, etc.

त्त्रः मानेशः सः भ्रयः यः त्रेहेंटः ध्यते 'तुशः देत्।

The second month (March) is the time for selling (of selling) shares.

भे भर से भूर । हिर अर्दर से तरि हेर्ने

Few people need learn this extraordinary language; There is no meaning of many people having to learn this, etc.

(13)—55

Both in Literary Tibetan and in the Colloquial this enclitic, used after the Infinitive or Participle in ∇ or ∇ , may be rendered As, When (carrying a Past signification), and it also has the force of the Past Participle.

EXAMPLES:

अट.चगान्न.हे.हे.च.श.चुर.ध.रट.।

And the Word became (having become) flesh. (John i. 14).

स. सर. ले. लेल. ची. चेर. सर. कुचा. के. लेक. ज. ट्रेंट्र

ह्मांसर मगाद स्प्रीय हो स्याप्त स्वीय स्थाप्त स्थापत स्यापत स्थापत स्यापत स्थापत स

नेत्राहेशयने हेश याचा प्रमासम्बद्धाः व्यन्यन्ता

There cometh a woman of Samaria (a woman of Samaria having come) to draw water. (John iv. 7).

In the beginning was the Word (the Word having been). (John i. 1).

Ye shall see the heavens opened, and, etc. (The heavens having opened, ye shall see, etc.). (John i. 51).

Then, in the calculator's computations the year omens having been harmonious.

When he has arrived (He having arrived) at the house of the family.

When about a year had elapsed.

When at last the wedding was over.

As the big bell was tolled.

In Literary Tibetan, especially in Western Tibet, 55° is often used gerundially with the Present Participle in 95° , 95° , etc., and means In, When, While, etc.

EXAMPLE:-

ম্র্রাপির দ্রীর ব্রাপের রাষ্ট্রির রাজী আন্বা When singing, it is best to stand up.

In Literary Tibetan, and especially of late in the Colloquial, it is used as a familiar form of the Imperative, and implies advice, exhortation and entreaty.

EXAMPLES:

रें ब'द्विं ग्रीम भना बेंबा (जिना) द्वा | Oh, do eat your food. द्विंद रूट ने प्रोमा कुनाब क्वेंच (हिना) द्वा | Do learn your lesson. (14)—5 after 5, 5, 5, 5, 5, 5, 8 5' after 47', 4', 5'547' after vowels.

N after N

W after anything.

These particles, as Verbal Auxiliaries, are extensively used in Literary Tibetan to express the Infinitive Future and the Supine. They are seldom, if at all, used in the Colloquial, save by those who affect Literary forms.

EXAMPLES :-

श्रामायायार्गायायाः श्रीमामा विदायसा अर् पहेमारार प्रमुर है।

श्चिम यारीया दशादा रदा रूटा अवसार द्वे विकार्थे प्रतिकासम् रिकार्थे प्रतिकासम् रिकार्ये प्रतिकासम् रिकार्थे प्रतिकासम् रिकार्ये प्रतिकासम्

्वेना क्षेत्र हे ' त होत् ' केट ' हेते ' खुना ' द्रम इससम्बेह्मायर द्रायास्य ध्रित

रे.रचा.पासी इसरा से मोर्शेर पर इ. च. स्ते नर र स्ना नस्य नहिंद र दहना यदै न्यर यस् र यर मुरे

निंदि के दिन दान होना सा सेंद्र पर निंद See that he BE with you without र्टासक्तर्नित्रिंग विमा।

देव गुट दवे नायस समाम्येव या झें ५ ५ **८ह्मायके द्वे द्वद्यायके ।**

To him that overcometh will I give TO EAT of the tree of (Rev. ii. 7).

To him that overcometh will I grant to SIT with me in my throne. (Rev. iii. 21).

Who is worthy to open (opening) the book and to loose the seals thereof? (Rev. v. 2).

And to them it was given that they should not kill them (not to kill them) but that they should be tormented (but to be torment-ED) five months. (Rev. ix. 5).

fear. (1 Cor. xvi. 10).

But to SIT on my right hand or on my left hand is not mine to give. (Mark x. 40).

WC'ন্টিনি ই'ন্মিন্টির মেন্ট্রমান্ত্র And the Lord's servant being apt
TO TEACH. (2 Tim. ii. 24).

लभारे रेचका शि.पहियातर प्रचीर हो। कृ. ट्रे.ज. मि. सका विर. ज. रेजूक रा.ज.क्रेंक The Lama will allow you TO OFFER prayers to-morrow in the monastery.

नेन्ममीश्रामिद्धमार्मम् न्यान्यस्मार्भिद्धाः। They have allowed him to Build the house.

The last of these particles, namely A, is not much used in this connection in Literary Tibetan. It may, however, be so used instead of any of the others.

EXAMPLE :-

ट खु ता दर्गे दे।

I go to see.

(15)— The and The force of the Present Participle, and, with the added, may be used as an adjective; while The serves as a Gerund, meaning As, While, or Whilst, and also Though, and Because, or Since, according to circumstances.

EXAMPLES:-

ट. ८ मूँ निवस्मक्रम।

I am going. (Elegant form).

ட'ম' ক্রদার্ম' বন্ধি, 'মু' শ্বুদ্রম' বিশ্ব' দুচ' He glanced at me with a loving look.

त्रुः स्वाधाः गुरुषः दम्बिः याः वाः यहिमा यहितः तुः स्वाधाः स्वाधाः विका

As the Lamas entered the monastery (while entering the monastery) they chanted hymns.

मिंट भाषाशिभाष्ट स्पेर् प्रतितु रु सामलेश स्था

Though he had tea he did not drink.

कर बिंद नी हिन पु अपित निवेद पु Since the beer was in front of him Agank.

(16)—るに、

This is a Colloquial Suspensive. Added to the verbal Root, it means As, Since, Because, and implies either Present or Past.

EXAMPLES:-

র্বিন্দ্রির্বিন্দ্রের্বির্বিন্দ্রে। Well, as you are going, ride my horse, do.

ট্রি-শীর্মার্থী ক্রাব্রান্তি হেরা ইশ্মিনানী As you have sent the book, I will read it.

(17)— 5회 and 5회교기

These also are much used Colloquially. Annexed to the verbal Root 55° acts as a Gerund, meaning As, When, While, At the time of, etc.

EXAMPLES:-

ট্রি'শ্রীঝারেরী'রুঝানারি'রীমাম' (বা') বি' When writing take care what you say.

मिं बेंब दुश मिं केंग केंग दुश या देत्। As he went off, he smiled.

5 has the same meaning, but is annexed to the simple. Infinitive, or Participal form of the verb, put into the genitive case.

EXAMPLES:-

প্রি-শূরিমন্ত্রেমন্ত্রিমন্ত্রিমন্ত্রিমন্ত্রিমন্ত্রিমন্ত্রিমন্ত্রিমন্ত্রিমন্ত্রমন্ত্রিমন্ত্রিমন্ত্রমনন্ত্রমনন্ত্রমন্ত্রমন্ত্রমন্ত্রমন্ত্রমন্ত্রমন্ত্রমন্ত্রমন্ত্রমন্ত্রমন্ত্রমন্ত্রমন্ত্রমন্

मित्र्विन पति नुसाय मिर्केन किना नुसाय As he went off, he smiled.

351

A Literary equivalent of 크지의 is 준지] V.—Moods and Tenses.

A .- Infinitive Mood.

The Infinitive, both in Literature and in the Colloquial; is the simple form of the verb as given in dictionaries, i.e. the Root, with T or T

annexed, according to the rule regarding the final letter of the root. It is the same as the Participial form, and also as the form of the verb regarded as a substantive. Thus 35% may mean $To\ do$, or Doing, or A, or the, doing.

Each root can be regarded as the basis of a special Infinitive. Thus:—

In Tibetan the latter of two related English verbs takes precedence of the other, and may be put in the Infinitive, or in the Genitive form of the Infinitive. Thus:—

At the same time the Colloquial construction by which \mathfrak{F} is added to the verbal Root has largely taken the place of the Infinitive.

Thus:—

In conversation, however, it is quite allowable and common to omit the \(\mathbb{I} \) or \(\mathbb{T} \) of the verb that is governed by the other. Thus:—

ट मिट रा थ त्र्री दर्दे ।

I wish to go home.

ट व्याकंत्र हु मुस्य द्वे से पर्ने

I am unwilling to write with ink and pen.

This is particularly the case where the governing verb is $\mathfrak{A}^{\mathfrak{A}}$. To be able, $\mathfrak{A}^{\mathfrak{A}}$ To be allowed, $\mathfrak{A}^{\mathfrak{A}}$ To allow, $\mathfrak{A}^{\mathfrak{A}}$ To be necessary; must, ought, and the like.

EXAMPLES :--

द्यारिते स्ट्रीट पार्टेर मिट्या सर्वेट से I cannot see the snow on the hill.

८.शू.च्रेंच्य मध्या।

Let us go away.

दशा<u>त</u>ुँद्राथात्र्वेदात्रह्म।

I allow you to depart.

मार्शेन पदे देन ता जनमार

In order to live it is necessary to eat.

मिंद्र महाया मृत्य दियो दिये हा

You must go to school.

मुँदणीश्वासुमुद्देद्दाः शे**द**नीश ।

You ought not to beat that child.

Where the governing verb is one of *Knowing*, *Saying*, *Hearing*, *Thinking*, or the like, the governed verb, in sentences like the following, is put in the Infinitive, or else the verbal Root, with \mathfrak{J} annexed, is used.

EXAMPLES :-

हिंदिनदेश्च स्थान्य दशका विका

I did not know that you were here (you to be here).

हिंदिमास्यत्में वः (or दम्बिंगुः) दशः भैनिशा

I do not know where you are going (you to be going).

লুখুন (or লুখুন্ট্ৰ,) ২৮८। লু.্ফ্ৰীগ্ৰ.টুগ্ৰ.গ্ৰহণ শ্ৰীগ্ৰ.গ্ৰ

History relates that Buddha was (Buddha to have been) at first a king.

हिंद्रेहें हे ब्रीट अपने में प्राप्त (or दर्ने कुं)

I heard you were going (you to be going) to Darjeeling.

हिंद्र हें हे ब्रीट या वेंद्र या येदाया दश में या येदा

I heard you had left (you to have left) for Darjeeling.

८शः मुँदः गुँशः इः गुँशः यः प्रीदः यः वश्रम् श

I thought you had bought (to have bought) the horse.

मि र्हेश दः त्यः त्यशः गाः देः वर्हेत्यः वः स्पेदः वः सर्वेदः दशः।

When they saw that the work had been entrusted to me (the work to have been entrusted to me).

The same construction is also used in connection with phrases like It were better that, It is evident that.

मिति स्रो भार्ते केत्र द्वा विषय स्था क्षेत्र स्था क्षेत

It were better that a large stone were bound on his neck and he were (he to be) cast into the sea. (Mark ix. 42).

It is evident that no one is justified by the law in God's sight. (Gal. iii. 11).

In phrases containing That, So that, In order that, With the object of, To the end that, For the purpose of, the verb is put in the genitive case of the Infinitive, and is followed by \(\overline{5}\overline{7}\overline{9}\overline{1}\overline{9}\overline{5}\overline{7}\overline{9}\overline{9}\overline{5}\overline{7}\overline{9}\overline{1}\overline{9}\overline{9}\overline{7}\overline{9}

देश'णे'देर।

 $\{In\ order\ that\ I\ may,\ or\ might,\ be\ here.$

দিবিদ্যাবনীবিদ্যাব

Where, in English, a mandatory Imperative governs a verb in the Infinitive, e.g. Order him to come, Tell him not to go, the Tibetan construction puts the governed verb also in the Imperative, not the Infinitive, mood.

EXAMPLES:-

দিনি: বিদা (উদা) মান | Tell him, come (to come).

দিনি:মান্দ্রী (বিদা) নাদান দার্দা | Order him, do not go (not to go).

নাদ্রানাদ্রী বিদা মুখা দান্দ্রী বালা Take care that no man lead you astray.

নাদ্রানাদ্রী বালা মুখা দান্দ্রী বালা মান্দ্রী মান্দ্র

Whenever it is possible to turn a verb into a Verbal Noun, or what is called in Latin a Gerund, it should be done.

EXAMPLES:-

ग्रिमान्यार्श्निय (८२) प्रसाहें हैं। It is better to be in Darjeeling than in Calcutta, i.e. the being in Darjeeling is better than the staying in Calcutta.

or भेर्मुं) भमामारेर्।

্রেম্মেরের্ক্তিন (বি°) মানুশামীব। For to me to live is Christ and to die is gain. (Philipp. i. 21).

B .- The Supine.

The genius of the Tibetan language is so different from that of other languages, both Eastern and Western, ancient or modern, that to

speak of Supines, Gerunds, and the like, in connection with it, is at least to strain the limits of analogy, if not to indulge in the illegitimate. But, so long as this is remembered, the Supine of Literary Tibetan may be said to be susceptible of several constructions. First, it may appear in the shape of the Infinitive put in the Terminative case with 3.

EXAMPLES:-

श्चराणुट कर्मी नर कुश या दे क मी नर र्वेश-विमा।

He that is able to receive (hear) it let him receive (hear) it. (Matt. xix. 12).

श्रे देवाश्राया दे यहेंद्रायर लु।

I ask to be forgiven this wrong. (2 Cor. xii. 13).

हिर्दे मी निर्म नहेर निर्म पर देश य लमाशःश्री

Worthy art thou to receive glory. (Rev. iv. 11).

दशः त्रे परः मात्रशः यः त्यशः ।

I was about to write. (Rev. x. 4).

त्म्रिं द्रा इसश ता नावश क्ट हैन यर स हेर उमा।

Forget not to show love unto (bestow love on) strangers. (Heb. xiii. 2).

Secondly, it may take the form of the Verbal Root, with 5, 5, 5, 8, or, less frequently, A, annexed.

EXAMPLES :-

एने केंग इट ये दे से इसस दर्ने ने स I came not to call the righteous but विष्याणीय। श्रेमाख्याद्वस्यात्वेरात् REN'NI

sinners. (Mark ii. 17).

<u>३१ रिमामी समी या सुमा चलमा है हिंदा प्रसा</u> 7575

That he should lay his hands on their heads and pray. (Matt. xix. 13).

दश प्रिट ता श्रुचाची विदायश अ.च.च.पटिचा यर विगुर दि।

I will give him to eat of the tree of life.

वुस्याप्तरीतिमासासु प्रत्मा।

This bottle is (likely) to crack.

मिट क्रेयशय दिया माजेनाश्राय खेतशको । He has gone to buy a horse Thirdly, it may appear as the Infinitive, put in the genitive case and followed by 35 or 355

EXAMPLES:-

ल.३४.मप्रे.क्रीम.शप्रे.सवंत.थशाप्रेटशाश्चा इ.क्रीमशाग्री.चील.श्चाश्चाश्चारात्रश्चा

The Queen of the South came from the ends of the Earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon. (Luke xi. 31).

हिट कुष बेट कुष यदे कुर नु बेद बें।

He came forth conquering and to conquer. (Rev. vi. 2).

The Colloquial has no Infinitive in the Terminative case with \mathcal{K} . That is only found in Literary Tibetan. In the Colloquial, therefore, the Supine never appears in that form. It expresses itself either through the Infinitive alone, or through the Infinitive put in the genitive case and followed by $\widetilde{\mathcal{F}}_{\mathcal{K}}^{\mathcal{K}}$ (and generally means "In order to," or "For the purpose of"), or through the particles $\widetilde{\mathcal{F}}_{\mathcal{K}}$ (when necessity or obligation is implied), or \mathcal{K} (object or purpose) annexed to Verbal Roots.

EXAMPLES:-

भूट मञ्जू म भीम गीमा में श्रीमा माश्रीमा श्रीटा।

८ॱब्रिससामदायाक्षेत्र न्युरिन्ने सङ्गानदे देव वाद्योगी स्पर् A carpenter has come to mend the chair.

I am on my way (going) to Court, to see the trial.

E'5E' अनुस 'र्रेन्स'र्स नुन्दि पदि 'र्रेन्स' Come with me to hear the music.

E'ग'यो'ग' त'यादवे 'मिट' य' पर्केंट 'या देव ' I went to Calcutta to sell my house.

हें हे न्री अपने मुं चना देर मुर नार्कें । How far is it (to go) to Darjeeling.

C .- The Verbal Noun.

What this is may be seen in the sentence, For to me to live is Christ, and to die is gain. Here, the Infinitives, To live, and To die, may be turned into Nouns. The living and The daing.

In Literary Tibetan the Verbal Noun appears either in the guise of the Infinitive (which, as already explained, is formally the same as the Noun and the Participle) or in the guise of the Infinitive followed Thus, in Literary Tibetan, either of the by the Definite Article 5 following contsructions is right :-

टर्स्यायर्के स्प्यास्य विगार्थेव। यके यः प्राप्त सव सवि देव प्रवर्ते। Or:-

८.४८.४.४.४.४.४.४.५.५.५१ ५३.४. अट यव राते देव र्यंव के ।

For to me to live is Christ, and to die is gain. (Philip. i. 21).

So also:-

यत्रक्षः नेद्रयः (कः) येम्बर्यः सःस्वा

श्र. तैया. त्र. थ्या. श्रापट्र. यीजा. श्री. रे. वहमायः (वैः) रगद्।

र्श्विय। देन इसका विन्दार (वि) Master, it is good for us to be here. अमार्चि भेव।

It is not expedient to marry. (Matt. xix. 10).

It is hard for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of heaven. (Matt. xix. 23).

(Luke ix. 33).

Colloquially the Verbal Noun may be expressed either through the Infinitive followed by 35, or 5, or through the Verbal Root followed by \$\frac{1}{3}\$, or w, with or without \$\frac{2}{3}\$

EXAMPLES :-

ឧញ៌ល ភក្និៈសិ ល ភ្មិប មានិស្ស នូប នូប The hitting, i.e. To hit a man 351

when he is down, is cowardly.

परिन्य परिवास देर विद्यापरिन It is better to be here than there; The being here is better, etc. थमामारेड ।

१६ or है may be annexed to आ if desired, but its omission. makes no difference.

EXAMPLES:-

पर्ने उपम् अक्ति स्टेर्

Or :— ५२ ५ ५ में अप्तर्रे क्वेर संस्रा It is pleasant to walk here.

In fact, the Verbal Noun, just like any other noun, is subject to declension.

EXAMPLES :-

भगावन्त्रकृतः यायासम्बन्धाः विदायनायायाः द्रयाः विदार्भे अस्यासम्बन्धाः विदायनायायाः यमः द्रमें स्रा

Let every man be swift to hear, slow to speak, slow to wrath. (Every man should be swift as regards hearing, slow as regards speaking, slow as regards being angry). (James i. 19).

The Verbal Noun may be formed out of any of the Infinitives, Present, Past, or Future.

D.—Participles.

The Present Participle of every verb is, in its simplest form, the Present Root with I annexed after final I, I, I, I, I and I, as a III Climbing; III Being; AIII Leaving; III Receiving; AIII Climbing; III Hearing; or with I annexed after final I, I, I, I, and all vowels, as III Beating; III Gnawing; AIIII Falling; IIII Rejoicing; AIIII Going; and the Past Participle in its simplest form is the Perfect Root with I annexed, as IIII Spoken, or with I annexed, as IIII Spoken, or with I annexed, as IIII Spoken, with I or I, as the case may be, added to the completive auxiliary as IIII or I, and IIIIIII

From either of these Participles may be formed the Active Participle, by taking the Present or Perfect Root and adding to it the word 35%, or 35%, or

Agent, or Instrument. The phrase thus formed can be used either as an adjective or as noun.

EXAMPLES:-

सुनान्त्रोर् (or नहार्) ह्यान्द्रो The sheep-killer. सुनान्त्रोर् (or नहार्) ह्यान्द्रमुँहोरी The sheep-killing man.

These, it is obvious, can also be rendered periphrastically, thus: He who kills, or killed, the sheep.

But the simple Participles, Present or Past, can also themselves be used periphrastically, by regarding either as an adjective and putting it in the genitive case if it precedes its noun, or in the nominative if it follows its noun.

EXAMPLES:-

The work that I do (the by me doing work) itself bears witness that the Father hath sent me (to have sent me). (John v. 36).

And the Father which sent me (the me having sent Fother) hath also borne witness of me. (John v. 37).

The above illustrate the adjective phrase preceding its noun. The following are examples of the Participial Adjective following its noun:—

क्षेत्रंदरन्ते, instead of

The man who is coming: The coming man.

ব্যাক্তম্বদ্দেশ্বাদ্ধী, instead of মদ্দেশ্বদ্ধীব্যাক্তাদ্ধী

The book that was sent: The sent book.

In the Colloquial the construction of these Active Participles and Periphrastic Participial phrases is in 5/5 for animates, human or otherwise, and in 5 or 5 for inanimates, in both cases annexed to the root. Here, too, the expression or phrase may be treated either as a noun or as an adjective, and in the latter case it may precede or follow its noun.

EXAMPLES :-

ध्यान्यम्बन्धाः के दे।

Or:-

शे.लाटशायकरी।

सर्मियः शास्त्रःमीः सनाः ।।

Or :--

यनायः भेर मिन सामन्ते।

र्भेटशसम्बन्धीकी है।

Or :--

श्रेर्णिदशास्त्रम्बर्दे।

सर्वियः सम्बन्धिः समाय।

Or:-

यमाराःस्रेर्यन्त्रायःस्राम्बर्रे।

के उन्हें उन्नों नित् विष्ट्रिं है।

Or :--

विट्यूट के उक्त के प्रमानित

के उक्ते उसे प्रति विदर्भे दिने

Or:-

चिट्ट्रेंटके उके उन्हें दानि

In the case of verbs with no Future root, the Literary Future Active Participle is formed thus:—

के उ.के उ.प में आमन मुँ भैट झॅट दे। or The gro

अर्वेट कुं भेर मेरे के रे। or perhaps

In the Colloquial 57 is used thus:

क्रे.२.क्.२.५म्.मि.चेर्-१८.क्र्..८।

The coming man: the man who is coming; the comer.

The grunting pig; the pig that is grunting; the grunter.

The man who came.

The pig that grunted.

The growing tree; the tree that grows.

The grown tree: the tree that grew.

The tree that is to grow, or will grow.

The man who is to see, or who will see.

The tree that is to grow, or that will grow.

As regards the rendering of the Passive Voice, see § 31, ix. A. Relative Pronouns.

The Future Participle, in Literary Tibetan, is expressed by the Present Participle put in the terminative case with $\overline{}$, and followed by $\overline{}$, signifying About to..., or To be...ed. In fact, formally, it is the same as the Present Infinitive of the Passive Verb.

Also by the Future Root with \mathfrak{Z}^{\bullet} annexed, signifying For...ing; or by the Present or Future Root with \mathfrak{Z}^{\bullet} annexed.

EXAMPLES :-

्रहेश.त.लूब। इस.त.लूब। इस.त.लूब। We were accounted as sheep for the slaughter (To be slaughtered sheep). (Rom. viii. 36).

हर नेश्या श्रमश्चर पर्य है ते प्रश्चर नुते.

Whatsoever things were written aforetime were written for our learning. (Rom. xv. 4).

The Colloquial is the Root with দ্বুনি or মন, or মন annexed:—
মার্ক্ত নার্ক্ত নার্ক্ত মার্ক্ত মার্ক্ত We were regarded as sheep for the slaughter.
মার্ক্ত (or নার্ক্ত মন্ত্রি মুনা)।

শুন ব্রীমা বা প্রমমা তত্ত ক্রিনি স্থান বানী Whatever was formerly written was written for our learning.

Many Participial expressions with a Present or Past signification are also formed by annexing to the bare Verbal Root, or to the Participle, the Auxiliary Verbal Particles already dealt with at an earlier stage of this paragraph. The following are all annexed to the Root:—

न், ந் ந், ல், த்ing. Present signification. Periphrastic form.

मेद, मेद, मेद, धेदing. Present. Sometimes periphrastic.

5, 5, \$...inged. Present or Past according to root.

ਰੋਸ਼, ਕ੍ਰੇਸ਼, ਪਾਰ ...ed. Usually Present, but sometimes Past.

The following are annexed to the Participle:—

E .- Gerunds.

This name is another instance of the attempt that has somewhat unfortunately been made to present the mysteries of Tibetan in the guise of western nomenclature. What has already been dealt with under the heading *Verbal Noun* was really the Gerund in the Nominative case (equivalent to the Present Infinitive); and the constructions usually called Gerunds in Tibetan Grammars are really a kind of Participial expressions; none other, in fact, than those which we have just been considering.

Here reference may be made to a form of the Gerund in the genitive case which is common in Literary and Colloquial Tibetan, though it might equally well have apppeared under the heading Verbal Noun.

EXAMPLES:-

মুব্রমম। ইন্মন্ব্র্নন্ত্রী ইন্মন্থ্রী Brethren, these things ought not so to be (of the being so, there is not propriety). (James iii. 10).

देत् 'गुैक्ष'ब्रेक्ष' यदे ' मानुक्ष' त्य ' क्षुमा' यर ' यहेत् 'यदे 'रेमाक्ष'क्षे ।

We ought to give the more earnest heed to the things that were heard (of the taking pains by us as regards the heard-things there is the more propriety or necessity). (Heb. ii. 1).

্রান্ত্র্রান্ত্র (or ঈ্রান্ত্র or ঈ্রান্ত্র Now is the time to buy, i.e. of buying = for buying.

(N.B.—This last is Colloquial.)

F.—Indicative.

(a) PRESENT.

In Literary Tibetan this is formed with the Present Root in several ways, some of which are as follows:—

- 1.—By the simple Root for all persons, singular and plural; as মেন্দ্রা I go; দ্বিদ্বাদ্রা Thou goest; মিন্মেন্দ্রা He goes; মের্মামেন্দ্রা We go, etc.; মোন্দ্রি I send, দ্বিদ্যামান্দ্রি Thou sendest, etc.
- 2.—At the end of sentences, by the simple Root as above, with the addition of \widetilde{A} in the case of verbs like \widetilde{A} , the root of which ends in a vowel, and, in the case of other verbs, reduplicating the final letter of the root, and putting over it; as \widetilde{A} \widetilde{A}

In fact, throughout all conjugations the singular and plural are alike.

Where, however, the Root ends in \mathfrak{R} , another \mathfrak{R} with \sim superposed is not added, but the \sim is put over the first \mathfrak{R} . Thus \mathfrak{R} I drive.

- 4.—A rather obsolete form is to add the \$\frac{3}{5}\$ or \$\frac{3}{5}\$ or \$\frac{3}{5}\$ direct to the Root; as \$\frac{3}{5}\$ if do go, etc., \$\frac{3}{5}\$ if do know, etc.
- 5.—Periphrastically, by the simple Participle Present, combined with the appropriate conjugation of A575 or W557 To be, or any of their elegant or honorific forms. But this is rather a doubtful form and in any case old.

EXAMPLES :-

6.—Periphrastically, by connecting the root with the appropriate conjugation of $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{5}$, $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{6}$ To be, the link being one of the auxiliary particles $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{5}$, $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{5}$ or $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{5}$ according to the rule relating to the final letter of the root, as:—

「本語」でです。

「本語」では、「「おいって、「「おいって、」」

「本語」では、「おいって、」」

「本語」では、「おいって、」」

「本語」では、「おいって、」。

「本語」では、「おいって、」。

「本語」では、「おいって、」。

「本語」では、「おいって、」。

「本語」では、「おいって、」。

「「本語」では、「おいって、」。

「「本語」では、「ないって、」。

「「本語」では、「ないって、」。

「「本語」では、「ないって、」。

「「本語」では、「ないって、」。

「「本語」では、「ないって、」。

「「本語」では、「ないって、」

「「本語」では、「ないって、」

「「ないって、」。

「ないって、」

「ないって、、」

「ないって、」

「ないって、」

「ないって、」

「ないって、、」

「ないって、、」

「ないって、、」

「ないって、、」

「ないって、、」

「ないって、、「ないって、」

「ないって、、「ないって、

7.—Periphrastically, by connecting the root with the appropriate elegant or honorific form of $\widetilde{\mathsf{W}}_{5}^{\mathsf{T}} \widetilde{\mathsf{U}}^{\mathsf{T}}$ or $\mathsf{R}_{5}^{\mathsf{T}} \widetilde{\mathsf{U}}^{\mathsf{T}}$, the link being the auxiliary particle $\mathsf{R}_{6}^{\mathsf{T}}$ or $\mathsf{R}_{5}^{\mathsf{T}}$. This is, however, obsolete.

EXAMPLES :—

ন্থ্য নাইন নাইন মন্ত্রীর নাইন |

ভূবি শুরি নাইন মন্ত্রীর নাইন |

I am sending.

Thou art sending.

विद्रामीक्षामित्र

And :-

दशःमोर्द्रिःमलेशःमलुमाश।

हिन गुरामितः यहेन सद्या

मिंद्र मीश महिंद्र प्रवेद प्रवेदाय बुमाश , or सदत , or प्रवेदाश पर देते।

As regards the Colloquial, when the Present Root of a verb ends in an inherent \mathfrak{W} , or \mathfrak{P} , or in \mathfrak{P} or \mathfrak{P} , that Present Root is generally used for the Present Indicative. With all other verbs the Colloquial, according to $\mathfrak{M}r$. Bell, usually adopts the Perfect Root, if any; or, as seems more likely, at least the sound of it. When writing the Colloquial it is advisable, or allowable, to employ the proper root.

The formation of the tense then proceeds thus:-

- 1.—The Root (Present or Perfect) for all persons, as হয় য see or look; মোমার্ I bring forth; মোলু I request; but either মোমার্টি or মোমার্টি I send.
- 2.—Periphrastically. The Root (Present or Perfect) combined with the appropriate conjugation of \widetilde{W}_{7} ', To be; the connecting link being $\widetilde{\P}$ ', $\widetilde{\P}$ ', $\widetilde{\P}$ ', or $\widetilde{\mathbb{A}}$ ' (though $\widetilde{\P}$ ' generally takes the place of these last two), agreeably to the final letter of the root.

EXAMPLES:-

८श.जे.मी.लूर।

I am looking.

ট্রিন (or ব্রিন) শ্রীনেরুল। Thou art starting.
নিষ্ক্রিন (or ব্রিনমা) শ্রীমের, or He is arriving.

तरुमा, or ॲर्ग्सरेरा

(b)—IMPERFECT.

This expresses the idea of the Periphrastic Past: Was, wast, were ing.

In Literary Tibetan it may be rendered by the Perfect root (if any), with I or I annexed, combined with the Indicative Present of Literary (I) To be. Thus:—

মেন্দ্রেমেন্দ্রেম্বর্ And Saul was consenting unto his death. (Acts viii 1.)

Or it may take the form of the Perfect Root (if any) with one of the auxiliary Verbal Particles or Suspensives annexed, and combined with \(\tilde{\V3} \) \(\tilde{\V3} \) \(\tilde{\V3} \) \(\tilde{\V3} \)

EXAMPLES:-

মানামে বৃহ্ন মান্ত্র প্রান্ত প্রমান্ত্র প্রমান্ত প্রমান্ত্র প্রমান্ত প্রমা

Probably however, it would generally be found put participially. Thus:—

ইনি বুমানাম্য বুমানা নাম্য বা those days, when the number of the disciples was multiplying (the number, etc. multiplying). (Acts vi. 1.)

This almost endlessly Suspensive Construction, as the ordinary feature of a Tibetan sentence, which really only contains an absolute statement at the end, must never be forgotten.

In the Colloquial the *Imperfect Indicative* has no special form. It simply employs the Present Tense construction, leaving the context (generally some adverb like 「ANINI Yesterday, ANINI Recently, or ANINI Long ago), to indicate the Past idea, if it exists.

EXAMPLES :-

নিধানা দিনিধানা নিদ্যাল স্মৃতি স্থানা Yesterday I was going to Court.

মুব্'ম'দ্র্'ন্'ব্নাহ্বান্বান্ত্র নাম্ব্র নাম্ব্র নাম্ব্র নাম্ব্র নাম্বর ক্রিক্র ক্র ক্রিক্র ক্রিক্র ক্রিক্র ক্রিক্র ক্রিক্র ক্রিক্র ক্রিক্র ক্রিক্র

ब्र-सेब्रु ५८-५५-वी विन्यत्नुन।

Anciently man resembled a monkey.

(c)—PERFECT.

This, which expresses the idea *Have*, hast or has ed, is rendered, in both Literary and Colloquial Tibetan, by the Perfect Root combined with the appropriate elements of $\sqrt[3]{5}$ To be, which, it will be remembered, are not quite the same in the two modes. Thus, in Literary Tibetan the construction is as follows:—

दशमाशुद्रशयाधिक वे

I have spoken.

हिंद गुरामहाद्याय द्वानी

or, occasionally, অবুর্বী

 ${$ Thou hast spoken.

मिट्र मीस मासुदस य प्येत ते।

He has spoken.

This tense is not infrequently used for our Past Indefinite.

Thus:—

८. वे. देव. पर्दे. पर्देश प्राप्त के विश्व के

To this end came I forth. (Mark i. 39.)

In Colloquial the construction is as follows:-

I have spoken.

हिंद्र गुरुष माश्चरकारा वर्तुमा or देदा

Thou hast spoken.

বিষ্ণান্ত্ৰেম্মান্ত্ৰ or, occasionally, He has spoken.

95ुमा

This also is often used for our Past Indefinite. Thus:-

मिसटादशद्दि देशसायीत।

I bought this horse yesterday.

Another Colloquial rendering of the Perfect Tense is to add 3^{C} or 3^{C} to the Perfect Root, if any; the construction being the same for all persons.

Thus:-

दशःस्रसारम्बिरःस्प्रदशःस्पर्।

I have brought the box.

८स-द्ये क्र-मत्रामाश-तर्मा।

I have read the book.

मिश्राक्षामी व्यासुदा ।

He has received the letter.

图子。图系[

The dog has died.

मिस्रु देशमायउद्गर्भेट दुन्।

The suit has been decided.

Certain verbs usually take $\Im \Xi'$ in preference to $\Im \Xi'$, and others $\Im \Xi'$ in preference to $\Im \Xi'$. In this connection practice will make perfect. The following are a few that take $\Im \Xi'$, namely, $\Im \Xi' \Xi'$ To do; $\Im \Xi' \Xi'$ To build; $\Im \Xi' \Xi'$ To fear; $\Im \Xi' \Xi'$ To die; $\Im \Xi' \Xi'$ To set out, depart, start; $\Im \Xi' \Xi'$ To understand; $\Im \Xi' \Xi' \Xi'$ To steal; $\Im \Xi' \Xi' \Xi'$ To be finished; $\Im \Xi' \Xi'$ and $\Im \Xi' \Xi'$ To come, arrive; $\Im \Xi' \Xi'$ To burn; and the following are a few that take $\Im \Xi'$, namely, $\Im \Xi' \Xi'$ To receive, get, obtain; $\Im \Xi' \Xi'$ To hear; $\Im \Xi' \Xi' \Xi'$ To see; $\Im \Xi' \Xi' \Xi'$ To throw; $\Im \Xi' \Xi'$ To hear. $\Im \Xi' \Xi'$ is generally seen with the 1st person, and where this is so the other persons usually take $\Im \Xi' \Xi'$

(d) PAST INDEFINITE.

In Literary Tibetan, at the end of sentences, this consists of the plain Perfect Root for all persons, with the final letter generally reduplicated.

EXAMPLES:-

रिन्द्रभ रेन्द्रम कुर र ऑर इस न्य भे पु Then they came up to Jesus and took him. (Matt. xxvi 50.)

मिट कुल लेट कुल नवे छैर नु र्वे के ले

He came forth conquering and to conquer. (Rev. vi. 2.)

When the verb possesses no Perfect Root the Present Root is used.

EXAMPLES:

WELN में 3. मीवर विमा पर सिमाश देश. And I saw another angel ascend from the sun rising. (Rev. vii. 2.) तर्नेन यर अवेंद्र दें।

But in phrases like the following, introductory to what a speaker has said, the Perfect Participle is always used:

ल.चेश.मशिटश.रा।

Jesus said. (John xx. 17.)

श्रेर. लभ. भना रजाश त्रिश हे हे. मक्स. द्रश्रश.थ. चेर.प।

Mary Magdalene came and said to the disciples. (John xx. 18.)

के.माद्यामावयायायस्य ग्रीयाचिताः स्र्याया रेते अन् र वे असल्याय।

The other disciples said unto him. (John xx. 25.)

Thomas answered and said. (John xx. 23.)

But note the following construction where the verb, being at the end of the sentence, is not put participially, but in the form of the plain Perfect Root again :-

W'नुसार्वित्र। ''' दासे सर्वेद आदा द्वार Jesus to him...blessed are they वश्याः इस्रश्यादिते लेशम् स्ट्रास्

that have not seen and yet have Thus he said. (John believed. xx. 29,)

Sometimes one sees :-

लेश मार्घाटश या यलके के

Thus it has been said. (1 Cor. x. 7.)

Note also the following construction, where \$7.5 for she could does not occur at the end of a sentence, and is put participially:-

युर्-सेर्-गुर्स-माद्म प्रचाय-प्रकारा-प्रका The woman hath done what she could. (Mark xiv. 8.)

In the Colloquial the Past Indefinite is rendered by the plain Perfect Root, if any, or, if none, then by the Present Root, with JT' or NT' added; and this holds for all persons.

EXAMPLES :-

दश-दे-देट. दर्श-दुट-धीमा द्विस्रसः I sent my clerk to Court to-day. 47ट-स्र्रिट-1

जन्मश्रा दशक्तु.मृद्ध्यःवैदः।

I received the letter all right.

(c) PLUPERFECT.

This tense, which expresses the idea Had....ed, is seldom or never seen in Literary Tibetan at the end of a sentence, i.e. as an absolute statement. It is usually met with in an introductory or suspensory clause, and is then rendered participially with a past signification. Thus:—

WE'रे'याचशस'तें'न5ट'वश।

And when he had considered the thing; i.e. Having considered, etc. (Acts xii. 12.)

विद्याचेरवहा।

When she had thus said; i.e. Having thus said. (John xx. 14.)

Sometimes it is turned into an adjective phrase, i.e. the Past Participle is put in the genitive case. Thus:—

ल.सैर्-सै.सैर.घ७वारार्-वावश्याता

Where the body of Jesus had lain.
(John xx. 12.)

In phrases like the following it is constructed by combining wat with the Perfect Participle, thus making a sort of Past Infinitive.

EXAMPLES :-

ਰਿੰਗ ਵਿੱਚ ਜ਼ਿੰਦ ਸਾਲੇਤ ਹਾ ਐਤ ਹਾ ਫ਼ਬਾਬੁੱਕਾ I heard you had gone (you to have gone) to Darjeeling.

ন্ত্ৰিক্লী মান্ত্ৰিক্ষামান্ত্ৰীক্ষামান্ত্ৰীক্ষামান্ত্ৰীক্ষামান্ত্ৰীক্ষামান্ত্ৰীক্ষামান্ত্ৰীক্ষামান্ত্ৰীক্ষামান্ত্ৰী (to have bought) the horse.

म्पट्स्स्सागुस्यः यस्यान्यः वर्द्ध्यः वास्पेदः

When they saw that the work had been entrusted (to have been entrusted) to me.

When it does appear at the end of a sentence, it may take the form of the Perfect Root, followed by 5%, and combined with the Present Indicative of $\widetilde{\mathsf{W5}}$. Thus:—

दश यहर वश थेर ।

I had sent.

्वा स्ट्रिंग्णुश्चायन्द्रम्यः विश्वायन्द्रम्यःस्ट्रिंगः विश्वायन्द्रम्यःस्ट्रिंगः

Thou hadst sent.

He had sent.

Or better :-

द्धायन्द्राध्येत्। चित्रः क्षेत्रः वन्द्रम्। विद्धायन्द्रः स्पेत् or त्रुम्। or स्पेत्रः व रेत्रा

Ditto.

Sometimes, e.g. in cases in which the direct mode of speech is adopted, the Pluperfect is avoided in favour of the Perfect.

EXAMPLES :-

भेर. लभ. भनी. रेज. श.ट्रंटश. टे.डे.मोथस. इसश्चाल.ड्रंट.त. टश.चाड्र्.च्रंट्रा.हे.। लंद्रा. लभ. भनी. रेज. श.ट्रंटश. टे.डे.मोथस.

Mary Magdalene cometh (having come) and telleth (told) the disciples, I have seen the Lord; and how that he had (has) said these things unto her (me). (John xx. 18.)

The Colloquial has no special Pluperfect Tense. Any of the preceding Past Tenses belonging to it may be used (whichever is the more convenient), or even perhaps the Literary construction in 55° attached to the Perfect Root and combined with $\widetilde{\mathcal{A}}_{5}$

EXAMPLES:-

मि होत्रायाप्टर ए वेंब र्शेट ।

When he arrived I had gone.

दशद्योक्तां कार्या वर्षा वर्षा वर्षा वर्षा वर्षा में I had already sent him the book.

मिस्यायात्रमाष्ट्रात्मामार्येटा।

He had never been to Lhasa.

(Note.—55; (pron. nyúng) Ever, or, with a negative, Never, is in all tenses attached to the root, and treated as part of the verb.)

In other respects the Colloquial constructions are much like the Literary.

EXAMPLES :--

শিষামন্ত্রস্থান্ত or মিন্ত্রাত্তির I did not know that he had married. तारशाजेशाशाश्री।

页刻[7.4.4]

When he had gone.

(f)FUTURE.

The Literary construction of this tense is either with the plain Future Root (if any) of the verb, or with the Present Infinitive in the Terminative case, combined with the auxiliary verbs and become, or be; 57 To become or do; and 357, or WIN To come. The construction with 57 is Intensive. There is also another construction with the Present or Future Root combined with 5 and the auxiliary verb 🛱 🗸 To be. This carries the meaning I am to, or I have to. All these constructions, save the last, are used with all persons.

EXAMPLES :-

EN-521-6-5-125-12-15-12-1 ८८४ द्रीक दे हिंद अमिर्दे पर द्रमुर दें। I shall send thee the book. दश्रद्योक्षरे छित्राया महितायर छते।

दशन्येकने हिन्यमहिंद्य प्रेष्टा दशन्येकने हिन्यमहिंद्य दशन्येकने हिन्यमहिंद्य हिन्दी अन्ति कने द्या

मिट मीशन्यों करने हिन्यामिट कु रेश्वा

I shall send thee the book.

I am (or have) to send thee the book.

Thou art (or hast) to send me the book.

He is (or hath) to send thee the book.

In the Colloquial the Simple Future is formed either with $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}\Sigma^*$ (for all persons) annexed to the Perfect Root (or probably more correctly to the Future Root), or with the Present Root combined with the Present Indicative of $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{\overline{\bullet}}^*\Sigma^*$ To be, the link between them being $\widehat{\mathbb{W}}_{\overline{\bullet}}^*$, or $\widehat{\mathbb{U}}_{\overline{\bullet}}^*$, according to rule with reference to the last letter of the Root.

EXAMPLES :-

हिंत्र ग्रीकात्री करें हिंत्र त्या नात्र हैं स्थान । इंतर ग्रीकात्री करें हैं हैं त्या नात्र हैं स्थान ।

मिंश द्रये करे मिंद या मादद लिंद ।

I shall send thee the book.

Thou wilt send me the book.

He will send thee the book.

Or :-

८शःमिर्देरःमी श्रीका

I shall send.

ট্রি**র** শূষানার্বির নী নি**র।**

Thou wilt send.

मिक्ष महिंद मी देता

He will send.

The other Future tenses, as known to Tibetan, are only found in connection with the Subjunctive and Conditional Moods. The first is similar to the Perfect tense. Thus:—

दश:य5८:य:Wेव।

I would send.

वित्रिः मुक्तान्द्रम् । व्याप्ति । व्यापति । व्याप्ति । व्यापति । व्याप

Thou wouldst send.

He would send.

However, with this the Simple Future may also be used.

The second is formed with the Perfect Participle combined with the Indicative Present of $\widetilde{\mathsf{W}}_{5}$. Thus:—

मिश्रायत्रायास्त्र, or यत्रायात्रुमा, He would have sent. or यत्राध्यार्थार्था

Or even thus :-

N.B.—The Future Root is seldom used in the Colloquial, unless, in the case of verbs like \(\textit{75\subset}\sigma\), it really lurks in the sound of \(\textit{55\subset}\sigma\) as said to be sometimes used in the Future tense, and in the Participles, etc. Even in Literary Tibetan it is not met with very much.

G.—Subjunctive or Conditional.

When the sentence consists of a conditional clause dependent upon a preceding hypothetical clause in the Present Tense with $\mathbb{P}(\mathbb{R}^3, \mathbb{R}^3, \mathbb{R}$

EXAMPLES:—
नाम ने ने ने निष्ठा स्थान ने ने निष्ठा स्थान स्यान स्थान स्य

विग्र-र्रे।

बुँर-मुँश-विश्व-वर्षेर-भिरा (or If thou askest him he will give.

When the preceding clause is in the Past Tense, and the conditional clause signifies I, Thou, He, etc., would..., this last clause, both in Literary and Colloquial Tibetan, takes the Perfect Participle, combined with $\sqrt[3]{5}$ in the Present Indicative, which, it will be remembered, is not quite the same in the two languages. Thus, in Literary Tibetan:—

দুঁই ব্ৰম্ম শুমান নিবা দেই । If ye knew me ye would know my Father also. (John xvi. 7.)
অবংশু নেই নিম্মান নিবা তা বুইশ্ নিব্

ট্রি-শীুঝ'দেশান্তীঝ'দান'দান্ত্রদ'র। মৌসাঝা If ye loved me ye would rejoice (i.e. be glad.) (John xiv. 28.)
্বিশার্ব-মেন্ট্রম'দান্ত্রম'দান্ত্রমান্ত

This construction may also apparently be used when the conditional clause signifies Would have...d, e.g. PTTWF Would not have died (John xi. 21); TJTTWF Would not have crucified. (1 Cor. ii. 8); but the construction in WFT (to which we shall come presently) is better.

The Colloquial is much the same as the above.

EXAMPLES:—

हिंदिकिंश दिन्ति विश्व प्राप्ति दिने प्यतः If you knew me you would also know my Father.

Or, for all persons:

टश.ट्र.पुश.य.लुब।

I would know.

र्हिन गुरुष दिन्ति सम्बद्धाः, or देन।

Thou wouldst know.

मिंश दें विश्वास देतुः, or वर्ना।

He would know.

But, when the preceding clause is in the Past Tense, and the conditional clause signifies Would have...d, then, both in Literary and Colloquial Tibetan, this last clause ought to be constructed with the Perfect Participle combined with the appropriate forms of $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{5}$'s in the Present Indicative. Thus, in Literary Tibetan:—

ই'ম্ব'ম'মবি'ব'মের'ট্রি'র্মম'ম'ম্মুম'ম' If it were not so, I would have told you. (John xiv. 2.)

८श.श्रुश.रा.लूर।

I would have told.

हिंद्रण्याञ्चरायद्गा

Thou wouldst have told,

মিনাস্ক্রমান্সির', or প্রদা, or সের' He would have told.

The Colloquial construction is similar.

EXAMPLES:-

Were it not so I would have told you.

दश हिंदाया देश वाहिंदा स्टिश या यद्भा मुश्रा or स्टिश स्टिश स्टिश

If I had asked you, would you have come?

দিশ্ব'ন্ম'ন্ন'ন্ম'ন্ন' or ন্নান্ন্ন্ন' etc. He would not have asked me.

H .- Potential.

In the Colloquial this is formed by adding the auxiliary \mathfrak{Z} To be able, properly conjugated, to the Present Root of the verb it governs. Thus:—

```
PRESENT.
```

```
(মে') মাইন্মুন' (for all persons).
                                                                                                                                                           (I) can send.
                   Or :--
( LN ) मिंदि मुन ऑद (for all persons).
 ८श.मोर्नेट.वेच.ग्री.लूर।
                                                                                                                                                                 I can send.
  हिंद गुरु महिंद बुद गु रद्मा।
                                                                                                                                                                 Thou canst send.
  विश्वानित्र मुन गी अर् or तर्मा or अर He can send.
      4351
                                                                                                                                            PAST.
    ( LAT ) मिर्ट मुन सिंट । (for all per- (I) could send.
                                                                                                               sons).
      ८श.मोर्ट्र. घेच.च.लुर्गे।
                                                                                                                                                                I could send.
      निर्णीशनिर्देश्वायात्रम् or देर्। Thou couldst send.
      मिश्रामित्रेट मुदारा रेत् or तत्म।
                                                                                                                                                                   He could send.
                                                                                                              or ATWIT, I could have sent.
      दशमिर्देट व्याम भेरा
        हिंद्र गुरु माद्दे मा विकास कार किंद्र माद्देश किं
         मिंश महिंद शुन या पेंद्र or तुना or शुन गुद He could have sent.
                   or ऑर्-य-रेर्।
                                                                                                                                                 persons).
```

The Literary construction with धून्य is as follows:—

PRESENT.

নিম্প্র বিষ্ণ বিষ্ণ বিষ্ণুবার্ন Thou canst send.

He can

PAST.

ত্রে।

ত্রি ক্রি বিদ্যালয় বিদ্যাল

Or :--

दशमिंद्रमुम्याधिक वि

I could send.

हिन गुरुषानि इसमान नुनानि or अव वे

Thou couldst send.

मिट मीश मार्नेट युवाय धेव वे।

He could send.

<u> दशमिर्देश्वनमञ्जर्</u>

I could have sent.

(And so on as in the Colloquial.)

But the Literary construction may also be with the auxiliary 5 % To be able, which, unlike 577, governs the Infinitive put in the Terminative case. Thus:—

PRESENT.

दशमिंद्रिः नरः वुशः श्री

I can send.

(And so throughout.)

PAST.

दशःमोर्देरःचरः बुशःयः धेवः वे ।

I could send.

हिन् गुर्भ महिंद यर कुंश य प्रतृमा में

Thou couldst send.

or धेव व

मिरमीशमिर्देरयर वुश्राय भेव वे

He could send.

दशमित्रियर बुशय भेरित्।

I could have sent.

ष्ट्रिन गुरुषमहिंद सर नुरुष सन् नुमानी।

Thou couldst have sent.

मिंट मीश मोर्नेट यर बुश य प्येंद दें or प्रदाम में or प्येंद य प्येंद दें।

He could have sent.

N.B.—It is important to remember that \(\sqrt{7}\), both in Literary Tibetan and the Colloquial, is annexed to the Root of the verb it governs.

I.—Probability, etc.

Phrases expressive of the *likelihood* or *possibility* of doing any thing are, in Literary Tibetan, rendered by means of the auxiliary verb \[\frac{1}{2} \] To be possible, or by the expression \[\frac{1}{2} \] Who knows? \[= May be. \]

EXAMPLES :-

शुः निशः दिन् दिं or दिन् तिरः दिनु र दि। I may go; perhaps, possibly, probably I shall go.

दक्ष महिंद (or even महिंद नर) हो द है। I may send.

Bुरणीशमिर्दि (or मिर्दिप्पर) श्रेर्दे। Thou mayest send.

मिंद मीश मार्नेद (or मार्नेद यर) श्री र दें। He may send.

दशमित्रिः श्रीत्राधित्रे I might send.

हिंद गुरेश महिंद श्रेद या दिना में , Thou mightest send.

or धेव दें।

मिंद मीझ मोर्नेद श्रीत प्याप्येत हैं। He might send.

दशमित्रिं श्रीत्रायित्त्री I might have sent.

मुद्रिः गुरुषः निर्देश्वरः प्रद्रना नि Thou mightest have sent.

मिंद्र मीश मोर्नेद श्रेर य दर्मा में, He might have sent.

or 45-51

The auxiliary 3573 To be, combined with the Root or the Infinitive, put in the Terminative case, also conveys the idea of probability or likelihood. Thus:—

युक्ष-स-दे-त्रन्त्र-त्रन्त्ता। दक्ष-स-दे-त्रन्त्र-स-त्रन्ता। क्ष-स-दे-त्रन्त्र-स-त्रन्ता।

This man is probably going.

I shall probably have to give it.

That bottle is likely to crack.

In the Colloquial শ্র'ন্ম', or শ্রিশানুদ্র Perhaps, or the auxiliaries এবিমান্দ্র, or এবিশা, may be used instead of শ্রিমা

N.B.— অব্স্ is sometimes written অব্স্ স্থা Which of these two is the more correct form is somewhat uncertain.

EXAMPLES:—

श्.र्वश्राद्धत्र्मामी।

I may go, or be going.

शुःनिशः हिंदिनों नी पतुना, or देता

Probably thou wilt go.

शुः विश्वामित्रों मी देन, or वरुमा।

It is likely he will go.

माठेमा छेन् न प्राप्त में।

Perhaps I shall go.

(And so on, as above.)

द्रत्वों मा प्रवास त्रं, or प्रवामी।

I may be going.

(And so throughout.)

दर्शेट मधीन मान्द्र, or धीनम्

I might be going.

(And so throughout.)

दर्शेट वर्षेत्र यत् तुः, or स्पर्ने ।

I might have been going.

(And so throughout.)

मारुमा चुेर् व ८ स्ट्रॉट य प्येव।

I might go.

मार्डमान्त्रेन्त्रहिन्द्रांद्रम्पत्ना, or नेत्। Thou mightest go.

महिमानुन्द्रार्थिद्धार्थन्त्र, or दन्ना। He might go.

म्डिम् नेद्र बद्ध श्रेट्य प्रदेश

I might have gone.

J.—Hortative.

EXAMPLES :-

५ न्यू ८ प्रेड्र ५ वर्गिका or ५ वर्गिका चित्र Now I must start.

८ द्वांक वितामहिंद द्वांक or द्वांकी I have to send him the book.

व्यन्।

८:५२:७:व्हार्वियः महिँदः ५वेविः यः धिव।

I had to send him the book.

८ द्ये क मिलामि ५ द्वी मी भैव।

I shall have to send him the book.

प्राथित हो हो द्वारा प्राथित का द्वारियों I want to go to Darjeeling.

च्ये ।

हिंद्दरम्भः अन्यः दुर्भिरः द्वीं मी यदुन्।

You ought to come with me.

In Literary Tibetan the construction for all persons is in \\(\frac{\pi_{\text{N'A'}}}{\text{N'A'}}\), not added to the Root, but to the Infinitive put in the Terminative case. Thus:—

मिट के प्रसेता नर द्वीश मी। द के प्रसीत सर द्वीश से।

He must increase but I must decrease. (John iii. 30).

There is, however, another construction for all persons in \mathfrak{Z} or \mathfrak{Z} (Future Root of \mathfrak{Z}), added to the Infinitive in the Terminative case, or to the Root, but sometimes used by itself.

EXAMPLES :-

देन इस्र वड़ा वड़ा व होन याता हुँ व हुन यन से हुने ।

वस्रशं उर्ने हें सं ते अन्य नियम विश्वास्त्र नियम के नियम के

(तड्ड्र त्यु र अर्दे: Vol. में leaf 174).

वस्यायर मुलेट द्वीट वर मु।

মমে'নুম'নম্ব'ম'ন্দ্ৰা'নম'নু | (Dulva, Vol. 5, Leaf 30). Let us not (i.e. we should, ought, must not) be weary in well-doing. (Gal. vi. 9).

All should hear this precept;

Having heard, should keep it well;

Whatever things we do not ourselves like;

Should not be done to others.

(Tangyur).

You must exert yourself and arise;

And walk according to Buddha's teaching.

There may be said to be still another construction in \mathfrak{F} added to the Future Root (or to the Present Root if there is no Future Root) combined with $\mathfrak{F} \mathfrak{F}$ in the Present Indicative. This expresses the idea of I am to, or I have to. Thus:—

दशमात्रदम् प्रमात्रदम्

वित्रणेशमात्रम् नुप्तत्म।

मिश्यान्द्रम् धेर्

८.८मूँ मुं प्रेका

हिर्देश के प्रमा

मिट दम् मुं मुं भेव।

I have to send.

Thou hast to send.

He has to send.

I am to go.

Thou art to go.

He is to go.

And also another in W Thus:-

८.ज.चीरट.ज.रूरे ।

I have (or am) to send.

८.ज.वर्मी.ज.रूरी

I have (or am) to go.

K.-Purposive.

To express In order that, In order to, With the object of, or other similar phrase, the Infinitive is put in the Genitive case, followed, in the Colloquial, by 55%, and, in Literary Tibetan, by 35%, or 55%, the construction being the same for all persons.

EXAMPLES :-

ন্ধা প্রামের ব্রিমান মেন্দ্রীর না He wrote to me in order that I might know.

মিন্সাম্ব্রমন্ত্রম্বান্ত্রমান্ত্রাক্তর্নার্মিন্সা He is reading the book in order to learn law.

L.—Precative.

In Literary Tibetan the construction is in $\frac{1}{6}$ or $\frac{1}{3}$, Imperatives of $\frac{1}{3}$ and $\frac{1}{3}$ $\frac{1}{3}$. To allow; the verb it governs being put in the Terminative case of the Root or of the Infinitive.

EXAMPLES :-

प्रिन्त्र क्रमार्चेन।

Let these go their way. (John xviii. 8.)

ह्या हिन । নার্থানা ইনিন্দিন নান্দ Let me send thee some tea.

क्या.र्चाश.चायट.।

If the governed verb is active and transitive, the subject is in the Agentive.

দ্বির্মী রুমঝ 'দ্রীঝ' ২০ দ্বী 'দ্বিব্রমী' Let the dead bury their dead.
(Matt. viii. 22.)
রুমঝাসুমানুম্বনান্ত্রদান্তিদা।

The Colloquial construction may also be in [57], but it is usually in 557 (the Perfect Root used as an Imperative); but in either case only the Root of the governed verb is used.

EXAMPLE:-

N.B.— ইনাম' in the polite expression ইনাম'নার্চ', is merely the Colloquial way of pronouncing নানাম' in the polite Literary expression নানাম'নার্চ' Please, Be so good as, etc.

M.—Permissive.

In Literary Tibetan the construction is in Exp To be allowed or permitted; the governed verb being generally put in the Instrumental case of the Infinitive, and the subject in the Agentive, if connected with a Transitive verb.

EXAMPLES:

दशःगोर्नेदः यशः क्रॅमाःम् । व्रितःगुरुषः गोर्नेदः यशः क्रेमाःम् । व्रिशः गोर्नेदः यशः क्रेमाःम् । दशः गोर्नेदः यशः क्रेमाःम् । दशः गोर्नेदः यशः क्रेमाः यो अत्ते । दशः गोर्नेदः यशः क्रेमाः यः यशुरुः दे । दशः गोर्नेदः यशः क्रेमाः यसः युगुरुः दे ।

I may (or am allowed to) send.

Thou mayest send.

He may send.

I was allowed to send.

I shall be allowed to send.

'(N.B.—This construction in $\square \$, or $\square \$, is generally used in books only.)

Sometimes the construction in 555 To be suitable, or proper, is used idiomatically instead of the above.

EXAMPLE:-

नार-विश्वाणुद-इद-दिः।

Whatever has been done is proper, which is the ordinary idiom for You may do as you please, or whatever you like. 1000年4

A CONTROL WAS A TAXABLE OF

The Colloquial construction is in ਨਿਸ਼ਤਾ added to the Root of the governed verb. Subject in Nominative for Intransitive verbs.

EXAMPLES :-ट'द्रमें केंगा, or केंगामी भेर। I may (or am permitted to) go. हिंदि तर्में केंमा, or केंमा मी तदमा। Thou mayest go. मित्रमा का देना मी भेर He may go. or त्रमा, or धेर्परारेता ८.८मी.क्रमानाल्यरं, or क्रमाल्यरं। I might have gone, or would have been permitted to go. दःद्रमें द्वेमामी धेर or द्वेमा खेदा। I shall be allowed to go. मिंद्र त्रों केंगा मी वदमा, or देद, Thou wilt be allowed to go. or क्रेना:ऑट.।

मिंद्रमें केंग मी रेड or केंग ऑट | He will be allowed to go.

But with Transitive verbs the subject is in the Agentive.

EXAMPLES:-

মেন্দ্রম্বা I may (or am allowed to) send.

दश्चन्द्रहर्मेन, or देनायाधिद। I was allowed to send.

হেশ্ব্দের্ডিন্, or ব্রহ্রেন্সের্ডির্ডির I shall be allowed to send.

Also note:-

प्रस्ति । विष्ठ होना । त्रीते विष्ठ विष्ठ कार्या । Are we allowed to smoke in this room?

N.-Optative.

In Literary Tibetan this may be formed by putting the verb in the Terminative case of the Infinitive and adding \mathfrak{J}^{κ} , the Imperative of \mathfrak{J}^{κ} \mathfrak{J}^{κ}

EXAMPLE:-

दश.मोर्टर.घर.मीर.थ.त्यर.।

Would, or Oh, that I might send.

Another Literary construction is in An, the Imperative of WE'A' or RTT To come; the verb being similarly put in the Terminative case of the Infinitive.

EXAMPLES :-

दशमिंदिन्दर वेना रेमा।

Would that I might send.

हिंद से द्रायान निर्देश निर्देश कर देना। May you without fatigue proceed

happily. (Das.)

Another Literary construction is in 5 If, combined with the expression 3.85. How suitable, or excellent.

EXAMPLES :-

८.८मू.व.क्.भ.१८.।

Oh that, or would that, I were going.

C. M. SIC. 4. B. M. PC. 1

Would that I had not gone.

दश'रवे'क'रे'मेरि'या श्रेर'केमा'य प्येकक'रे'

Would I were permitted to give you the book.

외.건간.

In the Colloquial the Root or the Infinitive of the verb is used, followed by AT

EXAMPLES :-

ट.एम्. (य.) स्मा

Would I were going.

दशमिट्ट (म) विग।

Oh that I might send.

The following Colloquialism is also heard:—

टमिन्द केमायाला

Oh that I might send.

८.८च्य.४.क्र्यासाला Would I were going.

O.—Imperative.

It will be remembered that many verbs have no distinctively Imperative Roots. Such, for instance, are NACA To see, and ANA To receive, each of which has only one Root throughout; and 5 To weep and ANA To flee, each of which has only a Present and a Perfect Root. In all such cases the Present Root is used in Literary Tibetan for the Imperative, with the addition of the Imperative sign ANA, or ANA, agreeably to the final letter of the Root. The further addition of 5 has a softening effect, and so has INCA politer form adds ANA to the Root, and a still more respectful form adds ANA to the Root.

Rules, it is true, are given in some grammars for the formation of the Imperative Root, but, as they are somewhat complex, and, moreover, do not always work, it is just as easy and much safer to look up in the dictionary the Imperative Root of each individual verb, and remember it as well as one can.

Prohibitives are formed with N' (never N' except in the case of \sqrt{N} and \sqrt{N}) preceding either the Imperative Root or the other part of the verb, if a compound one, e.g. \sqrt{N} , or \sqrt{N} , or

With some verbs, even though they have Imperative Roots of their own, the Present Roots, and not the Imperative Roots, are used for Prohibitions.

EXAMPLES:-

বর্নীন To go; Present Root ব্রা; Imperative Root ইচি Go; Prohibitive স'ব্রা (pron. Man-po.) Do not go.

র্ন্তির To do; Present Root ব্রিক্তি; Imperative Root ব্রিক্তি or sometimes ব্রিক্তি Do; Prohibitive স্থান্তিক Don't do.

বিদ্যা To come; Present Root বিদা; Imperative Root ব্যা Come; Prohibitive সাবিদ Don't come.

In the case of Double Imperatives, the two Roots are united by

EXAMPLES:-

र्तुमाता हुई। विमा।

Come and see. (John i. 39.)

In the Colloquial, if one is using the different Roots properly, the true Imperative Root, or, if none, then the Present Root, is adopted for the Imperative, as in Literary Tibetan.

EXAMPLES :-

ট্রিন্ট্রান্রন্ন্রন্নানা (for ঘা) ট্রন্ম। Take charge of this horse.

सहिर्याचेर।

Don't forget.

Or, if the Colloquial has a special Root of its own, it may be used Examples:—

দ্ৰেদ্বিদ্যান্ত্ৰিদ্যান্তিদ্যানিদ্যান্তিদ্যান্তিদ্যান্তিদ্যানিদ্যান্তিদ্যানিদ

But if, as may often be done, one is using the Perfect Root for all moods and tenses, then that Root is also used for the Imperative, with or without हैन, हैन, or निम्

If this latter Imperative sign is used at all, the Colloquial usually adopts the form ইন্।

or injunctions, or when talking to coolies and the like.

The Colloquial equivalents for নুনামান্ত্র, নুনামানার্ম, and জাম are মনামান্ত্র, মনামানার্ম, and জা।

55 is also largely used in the Colloquial instead of উপ, and has a softening effect.

The following are some of the commoner Colloquial Imperatives and Prohibitives:—

Infinitive. ২ন্

35'51' To do.

WE'T or AE'T To come.

प्रकृत अंदिन or प्रकृतिन्त or प्रमृत्तन To bring (in hand).

निर्दाय (मिर्दियः) To send.

ह्मनारा' (ह्मनाय') To pour.

র্ম্বান To lay or put down.

Imperative.

र्शेट or मुना Go..

र्चेश or चैश or चैश Do.

ন্ব্ৰা Come.

त्तिर ज़िना or त्मर ज़ेने Bring.

वेंद्र or मोर्नेद्र (डेमा) Send.

विनाश (वेना) Pour.

क्रेंग' (बेग') Put down.

Negative.

ठात्रों Don't go.

ਬਾਤ੍ਰੇਤ Don't do.

अ'ऑर or अ'त्र Don't come.

तित्रिरंसर्भेदः Don't bring.

মান্ট্র or মান্ট্র Don't send.

अञ्चन, or अञ्चनश Don't pour.

अर्क्स्य or अपन्नुत्य Don't put down.

As a matter of fact, in these matters there is no rule save custom; for, according as a man is more or less educated, so he will mix up in his speech literary with vulgar forms, and the only way to learn is to keep one's ears open and observe what the prevailing custom is amongst different classes of Tibetans; for some will prefer to use the roots properly, while others, knowing little or nothing of them, will adopt the sound of the perfect root. So far as speaking is concerned, it will not much matter which method is adopted, unless of course one is talking to a cultured Tibetan; but, when writing in Tibetan, the roots should be used properly, and the usage with the perfect root discarded.

VI.—THE PASSIVE VOICE.

In Literary Tibetan, as a rule, the subject of a transitive active verb, or of a causative verb, is put in the agentive case, and the subject of a neuter or of a passive verb is put in the nominative or the accusative (objective) case When, however, the active verb is intransitive, the subject is put in the nominative case. Moreover, when the subject, even of a transitive verb, is a pronoun emphatically used (as, for instance, with the particle $\widehat{\mathfrak{T}}$ annexed to it), the subject is put in the nominative case. Further, when the subject is obviously the agent or instrument, as, for example, when the postposition \mathfrak{A} is expressly used with the objective, then it is not necessary, though quite allowable, for the subject to be put in the agentive case; in other words, it may appear in the nominative case.

EXAMPLES:-

মন শুমান ব্রমান ব্রমান ব্রমান ব্রমান বিশ্ব বিশ

But what is a Passive Verb in Tibetan? How does the construction of the Passive Voice differ from that of the Active Voice? In a sense every Tibetan sentence, even when the verb is what we call Active, is permeated with the Passive idea. For, even such a sentence as WITTNINT The father loveth the son, may be rendered equally correctly The son is loved by the father; for, literally translated, it is By the father, to, or as regards the son, a loving is. It practically therefore comes to this, that, when the subject is in the agentive case, the Active Voice is intended: but when the subject of a transitive

verb is in the nominative or objective case, the Passive Voice is intended, unless some other structural peculiarity in the sentence indicates otherwise.

The same remarks hold as regards the Colloquial. The subject in the agentive case indicates the Active Voice; the subject in the objective (with or without A') indicates the Passive Voice. As a matter of fact, the Tibetan language strongly favours the agentive construction; and therefore the Passive Voice, or what passes as such, should be avoided as much as possible.

The Infinitive of the Passive Voice is, in Literary Tibetan, the same as the Participle Future of the Active Verb, i.e. the Future Root with the particle, e.g. 57 To be done.

In the Colloquial it is the Root with \$\vec{y}\$, or \$\vec{y}\$ added. These, however, may also be used in Literary Tibetan.

VII.—COMPOUND VERBS.

In Literary Tibetan these are of several kinds.

(a) A Substantive combined with an Active Verb.

EXAMPLE :-

3系でうちょ To make a mistake, or commit a fault, i.e. to err. In such cases the Substantive remains constant, and うちょ is conjugated regularly as an Active 4-Rooted verb; Present Root うち, Perfect 引い, Future 5, Imperative うち!

(b) An Adjective in the Terminative case with 5° combined with an Active Verb.

EXAMPLE :-

575555 To whiten. In such cases the Adjective in the Terminative case remains constant, and the Active Verb is conjugated regularly, or according to its nature with reference to the Roots it possesses.

(c) A Principal Verb in the Terminative case of the Infinitive with combined with an Active Auxiliary Verb.

EXAMPLES:-

महिंद्र वर तहमाय।

To permit to send.

माने र सर्यर चे र य।

To awake; To rouse.

In such cases the Principal Verb so formed remains constant, and the auxiliary is conjugated according to its nature.

EXAMPLE :-

वित्रुत्त्रहमाय।

To bid to do.

In such cases the Principal Verb so formed remains constant, and the Causative is conjugated according to its nature.

(e) The Present, Perfect, or Future Infinitive of a Principal Verb put in the Instrumental case and followed by the Root of an auxiliary.

EXAMPLES :-

टश्र.चोर्ट्र.चश्रक्ता।

I am allowed to send.

दश'य5C'यश'र्केम्।

I was allowed to send.

टश.चिरट.चश.कूचे।

I shall be allowed to send.

Or, Present Infinitive of Principal Verb in Instrumental case, declining the auxiliary regularly in $\widetilde{\mathsf{W5}}$.

EXAMPLES :-

महिंद नशकेंगा मी व्यर

I am allowed to send.

महिंद्र मश्र केमा य ध्येष्।

I was ,,,,

निर्ट. चर्रा क्रेन्। यर प्रमुद्दः or पुर्दे।

I shall be $,, \quad ,, \quad ,,$

Here the auxiliary alone is conjugated.

(f) A Principal Verb (itself consisting of the Root of one verb added to the Root of another) combined with an Active Verb. EXAMPLE—not very idiomatic, but merely adduced by way of illustration:—

वर्गेष्ठ्यानुर्य।

To stroll about.

Here the two Roots remain constant, and the Active Verb is conjugated according to its nature.

(g) A Principal Verb (itself consisting of two Roots as above, combined with the Root of an Active Verb in the Terminative case with 5, 5 etc.), combined with a Causative Verb.

EXAMPLE:-

वर्मे वर्गानितः नुः वहमाय।

To cause to stroll about.

Here all except the Causative remains constant, and the Causative is conjugated according to its nature.

In the Colloquial the Infinitive and the Root of a verb are never put in the Terminative case as they are in Literary Tibetan.

Moreover, the Infinitive may represent the Substantive or Noun as well as the Verb.

Hence, when the Infinitive, in form, is combined with an auxiliary verb, it may be regarded either as a Substantive or as a Verb.

Thus 3N'U' may mean either A mistake or To make a mistake; and hence the Colloquial phrase 3N'U'3C' may be rendered either To make a mistake, or To mistake, To err.

However regarded, the tendency of Colloquial Tibetan, when a Substantive or a Verb is combined with an auxiliary verb, is to drop the Infinitive form of the verb, or the full form of the Substantive, and to use only the Root, though this is not always done.

For instance the Literary 되지 (5') 퉑피디 To arrange or prepare (literally To place in rows) is used Colloquially with 출동되, thus :— 되지 (or even 되) 퉑피충지기

When, however, 454 To have, is the auxiliary, what looks like

a formal Infinitive is obviously a Substantive, e.g. $\stackrel{\sim}{R}$ in $\stackrel{\sim}{R}$ in $\stackrel{\sim}{R}$ $\stackrel{\sim}{R$

In short, the tendency to use the Root of the Principal Verb, or of the Substantive, holds, whether the auxiliary is an Active or a Causative Verb, though not where it is a verb like \(\tilde{\mathbb{N}}\subseteq^{\mathcal{N}}\). To have.

The ordinary Colloquial Honorific auxiliary verb is 🎜ངང་བ་ To be pleased, good enough, so kind as. It is combined either with Infinitives, or Roots followed by ភ្ញី, or bare Roots.

EXAMPLES:-

ন্ত্রমান (for ন') নার্চান।

ক্রিনের কিনাক্ত্রানার্চান।

To give.

To return, or come or go back.

ব্যাহানের বিদ্যাহান।

To desire.

VIII.—In Literary Tibetan VERBS OF BECOMING, GROWING, CHANGING, TURNING, GETTING, and the like, are often expressed with the aid of the auxiliaries ANTIO become, etc. or ANTIO To go, the latter being the more modern. The noun or adjective governed by such auxiliary is put in the Terminative case, e.g. ANTIO OF ANTIO Decome a Lama, ANTIO TO GATA TO get rich. But sometimes the Literary Tibetan has in these cases a special verb, e.g. ANTIO TO grow old.

The Colloquial, when it does not have a special verb, uses ATT and does not put the noun or adjective in the Terminative case.

EXAMPLE:-

युनार्चे त्र्ने न To get rich; but म्राय To grow old.

IX.—INCEPTION is expressed in Literary Tibetan with the aid of the verb 여름기자 or 클리지 (Perfect Root 기둥기자 or 클리지 Future Root 기둥기자 Imperative Root 링크 or 클리지 To begin. It is used

with or without the prefixed word AFT When used as an auxiliary the construction is that described under Compound Verbs, No. VII.

The Colloquial equivalent is (NT) 기 다 To begin, which when used as an auxiliary, may be combined either with the Infinitive or the Root (generally the Root) of the Principal Verb.

Inception may also be expressed by the verb next noticed.

X.—Imminence is expressed in Literary Tibetan (amongst other ways) by the verb ㅋㅋ To be about to, To be on the point of, To be just going to. When used as an auxiliary the Principal Verb is generally put in the Terminative case of the Infinitive.

EXAMPLE :-

दशःपद्मै.चर.च|**चश**.त.जश ।

I was about to write; or as I was about to write. (Rev. x. 4.)

In the Colloquial the same idea is expressed by means of the auxiliary verb $\mathfrak{A}\mathfrak{T}\mathfrak{T}$ To go, combined with the Root of the Principal Verb.

EXAMPLES :-

दशस्य ने दश्चित्र वर्षे स्थाने दश्चित्र । दशस्य ने दश्चित्र वर्षे स्थित्र संस्थित । निसंद दशस्य ने दश्चित्र वर्षे स्थित ।

I am just about to write.

I was just about to write.

Yesterday I was just about to write.

XI.—In Literary Tibetan VERBAL CONTINUATIVES are expressed with the aid of some adverb like 55 or 575 Always, Continually, Perpetually, or of a phrase like 55 35 35 Without ceasing.

EXAMPLES :-

विट मीश्र हमा हुं (or क्यु र हिम्। हमा हुं र नार यर सुर हम। क्यु र कर सेर यर सुर अस सेंग हम।

He hopes on, keeps on hoping, hopes continually.

Go on rejoicing; Rejoice always. (1 Thess. v. 17.)

Pray on; keep on praying; Pray without ceasing. (1 Thess. v. 18.)

Colloquially they are formed by repeating the Root of the verb, with \mathbb{R}^{-1} , \mathbb{R}^{-1} , or \mathbb{R}^{-1} added to each Root, and combining the whole with \mathbb{R}^{-1} To do, as an auxiliary.

EXAMPLES :-

दशः ज्ञामी ज्ञामी ज्ञीत्र प्रिंदा or ज्ञीत्र ग्री भित्र। I shall go on eating.
रियो क प्रिंगी मी ग्रीमा मी ज्ञीसा or ज्ञीसा Go on reading this book.
or म्रीसा।

XII.—FINALITY OR COMPLETE ACCOMPLISHMENT.

In earlier Literature this is expressed by putting the verb in the Terminative case of the Infinitive with $\overline{5}$, and adding $\overline{3}$, the Root of $\overline{3}$, To be finished, and then conjugating regularly.

In later Literature the same construction is adopted, but, instead of \$\frac{3}{3}\frac{7}{3}\, use is made of \$\frac{5}{3}\frac{7}{3}\. Perfect Root of \$\frac{5}{3}\frac{7}{3}\. To be completed, terminated, finished, with or without the preceding adverb \$\frac{5}{3}\frac{7}{3}\. Wholly, Entirely.

The Colloquial custom is simply to add 5? to the Root of the verb and then conjugate regularly.

EXAMPLES:-

XIII.—Desideratives are expressed, both in Literary Tibetan and in the Colloquial, with the aid of the auxiliary verbs $\Im \widetilde{55} \Im$ To wish, To desire, and $\Im \widetilde{\gamma} \Im$ (the vulgar Colloquial form of which is $\Im \widetilde{\gamma} \Im$) To wish, want, etc.

In Literary Tibetan 355% is combined with the Infinitive of the

Principal Verb put in the Terminative case with $\tilde{\gamma}$, e.g. $\tilde{\Sigma}$ $\tilde{\Lambda}$ $\tilde{\Sigma}$ $\tilde{\Sigma$

When $5\overline{\eta}$ and or $5\overline{\eta}$ (which latter is never written) is used, the subject of course is put in the Dative case. Thus: in Literary Tibetan:—

द्रायास्त्रीं स्वर द्रमें शास्त्री

I wish to see.

Or, in Colloquial:-

८'याअर्वेट'याद्मीश।

Or:-

टायासर्वेट दमें हा गी रेपेंद्र।

Or :--

I wish to see.

८'त्र'अर्वेट द्वी मी भेर।

Or :-

८'अर्थेट'कु'वर्रेर।

An Intensive form of ব্র্বিয় is ফ্লীমেন্ব্রিয় To long, to yearn, to crave.

EXAMPLE :-

टाई हे ब्रीट यात्र में क्षेट वर्दे।

I long to go to Darjeeling.

Instead of বেলু বেলু হৈছে I wish to go, another Literary form is বেলু ঘেনু হৈছে I have a desire for going, i.e. to go.

XIV.—FREQUENTATIVES may be formed, not by repeating the Root of the Verb, but by the Periphrastic Present.

EXAMPLE:-

मिन् मिन्य सामार त्यात में नि त्ना माना

Do you often go to Court (i.e. Law Courts)?

Or the adverb মার্ক্রামান্ত্রামান্ত্রা Often, may be added. Thus :—
ট্রিন্দ্রিমান্ত্রামান্ত্

XV.—Use of the Perfect Root in the Colloquial.

When the Present Root of a Verb ends in an inherent W (e.g. 맞지 To look), or in an inherent R (e.g. 지정자기 To bear, or bring forth), or in (e.g. GT To request, to ask), or in (e.g. 37 To live, feed, nourish), that Present Root is generally used for the Present Indicative, the Future Indicative in ATUNG etc., the Present Participle, Periphrastic Present Participle, Present Infinitive, Supine and Verbal Noun. Of course, it is quite allowable, and even proper, both when speaking and writing, and especially when writing the Colloquial, to use the Roots that are assigned to particular moods and tenses for those moods and tenses. It is said, however, that as a matter of fact this is seldom or never done, at least in Vulgar Colloquial. It is also said that if, in the verbs above referred to, the Future is formed with WT for all persons, instead of with TWA etc., the Perfect Root should be used; and that for all other verbs the Colloquial usually adopts the Perfect Root, if any, for all moods and This is very doubtful, except perhaps in vulgar Colloquial. The idea, especially as connected with the Future Tense, probably arises from the fact that the Perfect Root often has the same, or nearly the same, sound as the Future Root. For instance, in the Verb \$\frac{175}{5}\$. To send, the Perfect Root \$\frac{55}{5}\$ and the Future Root স্চুট sound alike or nearly alike. In this case, the better course would be to use $\P \subset \mathbb{R}$ instead of $\mathbb{R} \subset \mathbb{R}$ for the Future in $\mathbb{R} \subset \mathbb{R}$ best course would be to use the Roots properly, in all cases.

CHAPTER III.

SYNTAX.

- § 39.—Most of what the student will desire to know under this head has already been dealt with in Chapter II, Etymology, in connection with each of the different parts of speech, but a brief résumé of the main rules will doubtless be appreciated.
- 1.—Every Tibetan sentence is ordered thus: Subject, Object, Predicate.

EXAMPLES :-

८ सन्देशक प्रतिमूनामी स्प्र।

I am reading this book.

c: or द्राक्षा है द्वीदाय द्वीं द्वीं शाणे I want to go to Darjeeling.

यदै दर्देर्या स्पर्

- 2.—As regards the component parts of the subject, or of the object, if the student thinks more or less backwards, he will get a very fair idea of the order in which they should be spoken or written. That order is as follows:—
 - (a) The principal substantive; unless it is qualified by an adjective in the genitive case, in which event the adjective comes first.
 - (b) The adjective when in any case other than the genitive.
 - (c) Participial clauses containing relative or correlative pronouns, and auxiliary to the principal substantive. These follow the rule of the adjective.
 - (d) The numeral, or the definite or indefinite article, and then the postposition.
- 3.—Adverbs precede, and interrogative pronouns immediately precede, the verb which they qualify or with which they are connected.
- 4.—As regards the predicate, the verb comes last, every extension of the predicate preceding it. As regards the verb itself, the principal

verb comes first, either in the shape of an infinitive in the terminative case, or of a simple infinitive, or of a root, and then comes the active, auxiliary, or causative verb, these last alone being conjugated with reference to mood and tense.

5.—The general aspect of a Tibetan sentence, particularly if long and complex, is a series of subordinate clauses in a state of suspense, winding up with a definite statement.

EXAMPLE :-

रे. बंश मिट. मीश श्रे. ह्या श्र क्षश मिट्ट मीश है। है. त्य. येवश वंश च ब्रुम्श दायश। १ मोत्रश क्षश मिट्ट मी शर्तु र पुंचित्र या प्टा। मिट्ट मीश वित्र येश हे प्याप्तश। इंश पश्च केट माश्च द्वारा (Matt. v. 1, 2.)

And seeing the multitudes he went up into the mountain: and when he had sat down, his disciples came unto him: and he opened his mouth and taught them, saying.

But the literal Tibetan is: -

Then by him the crowds seeing, into the mountain having gone, having sat down, the disciples into his presence having come, by him mouth having opened, to them teaching was said.

APPENDIX.

CONJUGATIONS.

Note.—These are intended for ready reference; and, to economize space, pronouns have been omitted, except at the beginning. The plural is the same as the singular. They are not to be regarded as rigid, immutable expressions, but as forms which take on a moulding according to the structural necessities of the sentence.

I.—Colloquial W5' To be present; To exist; To be.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

८:व्यूर्।

I am, or We are.

हिंदि स्प्रेट. or परेगा

Thou art, or You are.

मिं सें ए वर्त्या or सें र्या रेता

He or it is, or They are.

Or, with an Indefinite signification:—

Past.

Same as Present, context shewing Tense.

Or :--

८ ऍ ५ दा भेद। I was.

ট্রি'ঊর'ব'বর্বা or occasionally ঊর্'ব'ইর' or (rarely, chiefly interrogatively) ঊর্'ব'ঊর্| Thou wast.

শিউব্যাহ্য or occasionally অব্যাহ্য বা or rarely অব্যাহ্য He was.

Imperfect: I was existing.
Perfect: I have existed.
Pluperfect: I had existed.

Same as Present, context shewing Tense; or same as above form of Past.

Future.

WT for all persons : I shall exist.

SUBJUNCTIVE AND CONDITIONAL MOODS.

Present: If (so and so)....(then) I shall exist.

(Present Root).... Transfer for all persons.

Past: If I would exist.

(Perfect Root)....

The second second in Past Tense and so on as in Past Tense and Indicative Mood.

Or :--

(Perfect Root).... T. f. a. p. (= for all persons).

Perfect: If I would have existed.

POTENTIAL MOOD.

Present: I can exist.

ॲर् वृत or ॲर् वृत ॲट f. a. p.

Or :--

ळॅर वृत्र गु रे भेरा

र्भेर मुद्र गुः त्र्वा (or देर् or rarely, chiefly interrogatively, भेव)।

ब्रिन मुन मुन (or तुन्ना or rarely ब्रिन)।

Past : I could exist.

ॲर् यून ऑप् | f. a. p.

Or :--

બેંડ્યુવપાયેલ | and so on, as in Past Indicative.

PROBABILITY.

Present: Perhaps I shall exist; I may exist; It is likely, etc.

मार्डमा चेदाव भेरिता f. a. p.

Or :--

ऑरमी थेव या व 5 | f. a. p.

Or :--

ऑद्र में धेद में (or द्रमें)। f. a. p.

Past: I might exist.

শ্রীন্ন অন্মান্ধন। and so on, as in Past Indicative.

Or :--

मार्डमा नुद्रान्य प्राप्त or दर्नुमा। f. a p.

Or :--

व्यून (or त्रुना) याधीवायात्र । f. a. p.

Or :--

र्थेर (or ८५मा) सप्पेरमों or ८मों। f a. p.

HORTATIVE MOOD.

Present: I must exist; I ought to exist.

र्षेर् र्नोब | f. a. p., or र्षेर् र्नोबर्फिट | f. a. p.

Or:-

অন্ন্ৰ্ন্ত্ৰ্ আৰু | and so on, as in Indicative Present of Colloquial धेन्य।

Or vulgarly:-

भेर्-र्नोनी भेरा and so on, as next above.

Past: I ought to have existed.

Or :-

भेरिन्नेशिसुदा f. a. p.

Or vulgarly :-

অন্ন্ৰি আৰু | and so on, as in Indicative Past, but with ন' instead of

PURPOSIVE MOOD.

Present and Past: That, or In order that, or So that I may or might exist.

भेर् यदे र्देन त्या f. a. p.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Be; exist.

नुदः, or ऒ्रायानुसः, or ऒ्रायानुसः, or ऒ्रायानुसः, or ऒ्रायानुसः, or ऒ्रायानुसः,

If Attributive only, then বুঁঝ', or বুঁঝ' (Coll.), or বুঁর' or নুঁঝ', or মার্হির্

Prohibitive: মাব্বুল, or মা (অঁক্ষা) বুক্, or মা (অঁক্ষা) বলুক, or মা (অঁক্ষা) মাধ্য f. a. p.

Note.— উনা, or ইনাঝানুর, or ইনাঝানারে, or হে, or জে may be added according to rule.

PRECATIVE MOOD.

Let me exist.

ॲंद्रपदुम्। (with or without रेम् etc.) f. a. p.

PERMISSIVE MOOD.

I may exist; I am allowed to exist.

चेंद्र हेंगा f. a. p.

Or :--

ळॅर्-क्रमामाळर।

ॲन्डेंनानी ॲन् ० तन्ना

ळॅर्-क्रॅम्मने ळॅर् or ५रुमा or ॲर्-स-रेर्।

(This last may be conjugated on, according to mood and tense.)

OPTATIVE.

Oh that I existed; Would that I existed.

चें प्रमा, or चें प्रमानिया f. a. p.

PARTICIPLES.

Present: 4541

Existing; Being.

Past: 📆571

Existed; Been.

Com. Perfect: অ্র্যাথ্র্ম

Having existed; having been.

Future: ऑट कुं, or ऑट मूं।

About to exist or be.

PERIPHRASTIC EXPRESSIONS.

W5'3|A5| Who or which exists or existed.

W5'ZI Which exists or existed.

प्रदिन्तुं (or प्रदिनुं) अपनि | Who is to, or will, exist.

ऑट मुं (or ऑट मुं) अव्यदी Which is to, or will, exist.

ल्राम् (or ल्राम्) रे।

Ditto.

OTHER PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

Present.

অচ তা As, since, because, etc. exists, exist.

लॅर्पदेर्शका

At the time of existing; when, while exists,

অঁ5'५। In or by existing; if, when, exists, exist.

चॅरिय। Existing.

মৃত্ শুষা Though, because existing.

चेरियदेर्देशया For existing.

Past.

व्यद्धा

₩̄¬Ч¬¬¬ | } As, since, because, when, after, etc. . . . existed.

ल्रेर्यायमा

র্মিণ্ট্রামা Though, because existed.

VERBAL NOUNS.

व्यन्ता, or व्यन्तानी

The existing.

SUPINES.

व्यन्यः, or व्यन्तु। व्यन्यदेनिया

To exist; To be.

क्रिन्स्य।

For existing; For being.

व्यन्यदे न्वया

INFINITIVE MOOD.

व्यूर्य।

To exist; To be.

व्यट्ट या प्रवत्य।

To have existed; To have been.

ऑट में (or ऑट मुं) भेन्य। To be about to exist.

N.B.— অব্যা may always be used for অব্যা but অব্যা may not be used for অব্যা

II.—LITERARY 📆 To exist; To be present; To be.

(N.B.—The forms in Q are only used when that verb is being used as a mere copula.)

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present: I exist; I am existing; I am present; I am.

(Same as in Colloquial.)

Or, elegantly but rather obsoletely:-

ट.भकुश।

I exist.

हिरमार्य।

Thou existest.

मिंट अरेश, or माइव, or अरेश या भेत्। He exists.

Or respectfully :-

यदमाः ॲर।

```
हिन्सद्र।
```

मिंट प्रबुवास', or सद्द', or प्रबुवास'य'भेद।

N.B.

মটমান is an elegant form for ইমিনা

नित्रन ,, ,, ,, ,, ,, ,, ,,

यम्बरा ,, ,, ,, ,, प्रेन्य।

মন্দ্রবা ,, a respectful ,, ,, ইন্মা

चित्रमारा ,, ,, ,, ,, व्यन्य।

Past: I existed.

(Same as in Colloquial.)

Or :-

অব্বেশ্বস্থান দূর দি. a. p.

Or :-

মূ ২ বি বি a. p. I was....

Or :-

ম্বিন্দ্ৰ মুক্ত বা and so on, as in second form of Indicative Past of

Or :--

गुरायाधीत्।

Ditto.

Imperfect: I was existing.

(Same as Present, context showing tense.)

Perfect: I have existed; Pluperfect: I had existed.

(Same as Past.)

Future: I shall exist.

ळॅर्न्स्र त्युर दें। f. a. p.

Or :--

विमुर् दें। f. a. p. I shall be....

SUBJUNCTIVE AND CONDITIONAL MOODS.

Present: If I shall exist.

(Present Root) ... of ... (any Future form as above).

Past: If I would exist.

(Perfect Root) " \$\times \widetilde{W}\(\times \videtilde{W}\) and so on.

Or :--

ं ज प्रेंन्यर मुर य भेतृ and so on.

Or:-

ार्ग मुर्ग प्रेम्। and so on. I would be...

Or :--

... न .. ऄ॔ र पर चुर रें। f. a. p.

Or :--

्री चुर्ने। f. a. p. I would be....

Perfect: If ... I would have existed.

(Perfect Root) ''즉' 전투, or ''독투기, or ''돗투기 f. a. p.

Or :--

ं ज् े र्यून्यम् मुन्यः स्प्रिं and so on.

Or :=

েব্ ' নুম্ম্ম্ব। and so on. I would have been.

POTENTIAL MOOD.

Present: I can exist.

พีร นร สุมาลั | f. a. p.

Past: I could exist.

ल्र-यर-वैश्व-याल्ये ।

অবিন্যান্ত্রান্ত্রা, or occasionally, chiefly interrogatively, অব। অবিন্যান্ত্রান্ত্রা

Perfect: I could have existed.

चेंद्र पर दुश य चेंद्र। and so on.

PROBABILITY.

Present: Perhaps I shall exist: I may exist.

शुः वेश प्रें पर त्मुर रें f a. p.

Or :--

ଐ୍ଟ'ସ୍ଟ'ଶ୍ୱିଟ'ର୍ଟି f. a. p.

Or :--

चेंद्र प्रत्मामी। f. a. p.

Past: Perhaps I would exist: I might exist.

शुःविशः भेर्परमुर्प्य भेर्। and so on.

Or :--

सिंद्रयम्बेद्रयाधित्। and so on.

Or :-

शुःविशः भेर्दायरः मुर्देशे f. a. p.

Perfect: I would have existed: I might have existed.

शुःविशः भेर्पायम् मुरायभेर्। and so on.

Or :--

অব্যাম শ্রীব্যা । and so on.

HORTATIVE MOOD.

Present: I must exist; I ought to exist.

पिंद्र'यर'द्वेंबिंखें or पिंद्र'यर'वु | f. a. p.

Past: I must have existed; ought to have existed.

ॲर्पर दर्गेशय भेतृ। and so on.

PURPOSIVE MOOD.

Present and Past: In order that I may or might exist.

चेरिन्यर त्युर यदि धुर। f. a. p.

Or :--

ऑट कुरि छैर | f. a. p.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

म्बुमार निमा or धेन् सर मुर रेम। Exist.

PRECATIVE MOOD.

Let me etc., exist.

र्षेर्न् रुमारेमा or र्षेर्न्य रुमारेमा f. a. p.

PERMISSIVE MOOD.

· Present: I am allowed to exist.

स्र्राप्तशं केंगान्ते। f. a. p.

Or :--

พีรุนร ธุร ั | f. a. p., or พัร นลิ ริกุส ลั | f. a. p.

Past: I was allowed to exist.

অব্যাধ ক্রিলাম তীব। and so on.

Future: I shall be allowed to exist.

भेर् प्रश्नकेंग्यर द्युर रें। f. a. p.

OPTATIVE MOOD.

Oh that I might exist.

थॅर्-यर-मुर-द ख्याः। ⊙r :— ॲर्-यर-वेंग-डेम।

Or :--

व्यन्तिक कार्या

f. a. p.

PARTICIPLES.

(Same as in Colloquial.)

PERIPHRASTIC EXPRESSIONS:

Same as in Colloquial. Also:-

ळॅर नुरुषाका or ॲर नुरुपर्य।

He who exists or existed.

ळॅर्'ग्रेर्'य।

That which exists or existed.

OTHER PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

Present: Existing.

ळॅन्दि, ॲन्या, ॲन्याया, ॲन्योन, ॲन्येन, ॲन्यिन, ॲन्याने केंगा, ॲन्याने केंगा, ॲन्याने केंगा, ऑन्याने केंगा, ऑप्याने केंगा, ऑप्याने केंगा, ऑप्याने केंगा, ऑप्याने केंगा, ऑप

Past: Having existed.

ळॅर्'रे', ॲर्'यश, ॲर्'वश, ॲर्'य'यश, ॲर्'य'र्ट'। etc.

VERBAL NOUN.

स्त्रिया or स्त्रियाती।

Existing, To exist.

SUPINE.

ॲन्सर or ॲन्ड्र।

To exist.

INFINITIVES.

(As in Colloquial.) Also:-

ल्र्यरत्युरःय।

To be about to exist.

N.B.— \widetilde{W}_{7} \widetilde{Z}' may always be used instead of \widetilde{W}_{7} \widetilde{Z}' , but \widetilde{W}_{7} \widetilde{Z}' may never take the place of \widetilde{W}_{7} \widetilde{Z}' when the latter means To be present, To exist.

III.—Colloquial Word' To be.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

धेव.

I am.

৭5ুশ or occasionally হঁচ, or rarely, chiefly interrogatively ঋঁৱ।

Or :-

(Perfect Root) " TINE f. a. p.

Perfect: If I would have been.

(Perfect Root) "5" TW5 | and so on.

Or :--

(Perfect Root) ত্র্মার্ক or ত্রের্মার or ত্রুমার্কার each f. a. p., save that 55 is confined to 1st person.

POTENTIAL MOOD.

Present: I can be. थेव व्या or थेव व्या खेट । f. a. p. Past: I could be.

ম্ব্র্রা f. a. p. context showing Tense.

Or:-

ਹੁਵ:ਬੁਹ | f. a. p.

Or :--

দীর প্রবাধানীর | and so on.

PROBABILITY.

Present and Past: I may or might be; Perhaps I shall or would be. মাইন ইব্যান্ত বি. a. p.

Or ·

चिंद्रभी भी नय पद्भ f. a. p.

Or :

क्रामी भीवामी f. a. p.

HORTATIVE MOOD.

Present: I ought to be: I must be.

धेद द्वीवा f. a. p.

Past: I ought to have been; must have been.

মন্ন্র্নার্না for 1st person, others taking ৪5ুনা

PURPOSIVE MOOD.

In order that I may or might be.

धेव यदे देवा f. a. p.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

हेंबा, मुका, मेर, or मुका।

Be.

मनुर।

Do not be.

PRECATIVE MOOD.

Let me, etc. be.

धोत् पद्या | f. a. p. with हेमा or रूट or छा or रूमाह्म मेर्

र्मारामादः। added according to rule.)

PERMISSIVE MOOD.

Present: I am allowed to be.

भेद केंग। f. a. p.

Or :--

धीद केंगा में भिर्। and so on.

Past: I was allowed to be.

भेद केमा राटा। f. a. p.

Or :—

धेन केंग याधेन। and so on.

OPTATIVE MOOD.

Oh that I were: Would that I were.

भेद त्मा or भेद य में मा। f. a. p.

PARTICIPLES.

Present:

लेब-या

Being.

Past:

लेबया

Been.

Com. Perfect:

व्यद्भाया विद्या

Having been.

Future:

लूट.मी. or लूट.मी।

About to be.

PERIPHRASTIC EXPRESSIONS.

भेरप or भेरपदे।

Who or which is or was.

लूट.ची.शान्त्र।

ल्ट्यू दे।

ऑद में स्थापन

अंद मृत्

Who or which will be, or is or are to be.

OTHER PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

Present.

येव-रश। र्भन्यदे न्याय। येवन्।

र्डट or सेव्रडट ।

येवत्य। पेंद्र'या

लेब रादे

धेव-रुषा

धेवन्यक्रिन्द्रसाय।

येवराय।

लेब व्या

लेब प्रश

प्रवापाय। MA-21-72.

SK.

かるで!

At the time of being; when, while ... am, is,

By, if, when . . am, is, are.

As, since, because .. am, is, are.

Being.

As. am, is, are.

Of or for being.

Past.

When, while .. was, were.

 $As \dots was, were.$

Having been; as, since, when, because ... was, were.

As, since, because, when ... was, were.

VERBAL NOUN.

Being; The being; To be.

. धेर्या

SUPINES.

শীব না ।

INFINITIVES.

মন্ম।

মান্দ্রমান্দ্রমা

মান্দ্রমান্দ্রমা

মান্দ্রমান্দ্রমা

মান্দ্রমান্দ্রমা

মান্দ্রমান্দ্রমা

মান্দ্রমা

N.B.— 짜주지 is only a copula, and may not be used for 짜주지, but 짜주지 may be used for 짜주지!

Moreover, it must always be remembered that \$\tilde{\mathbb{A}} \tilde{\mathbb{A}}\$, whether Colloquial or Literary, is never used substantively, but always in connection with some noun, adjective, or substantive or auxiliary verb, into which its forms have to be moulded.

IV.—LITERARY WATI To be.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present: I am.

धेव (व)।

৭ বুলা (লী) or occasionally, chiefly interrogatively, এব। অব (বি)।

Or, honorifically:—.
(Not used: ordinary মীব্ with স্ব্ৰা instead of চা) বি

लम्बासः (झाँ) or लम्बासासास्त्रेयः (ब्रि)।

Past: I was.

Same as first Present form, context showing Tense.

Or :--

ः यः येषः (र्वे)।

ান্দ্ৰ্ব্ (মৃত্) or occasionally, chiefly interrogatively দৌৰ্।

Imperfect: I was being.
Perfect: I have been

Same as first Present form, context showing Tense; or same as Past.

Pluperfect: I had been.

Future: I shall be.

ः वरावनुरः (र्हे)।

...चरत्वीर. (रू)।

...जूरत्यबैरः (रू)।

each f. a. p

CONDITIONAL AND SUBJUNCTIVE MOODS.

Present: If I shall be.

(Present Root) "즉"'국민국 (국) f. a. p.

Past: IfI would be.

(Perfect Root) শ্রুমান্মর (ব্রি) and so on.

Or :--

ं कुराहें। f. a. p.

Perfect: If ... I would have been.

POTENTIAL MOOD.

Present: I can be.

শৈশ্বুন (নি)| f. a. p.

 $\mathrm{Or}: -\!\!\!-\!\!\!-$

দ্ববাদ বুৰা (র্য়)।

Past: I could be.

धेन श्रुपः याधेन (नि)। and so on.

Or :--

भेद्राय प्रेंद (व्) | and so on.

Perfect: I could have been.

पेन् मुन पार्पेन् (र्ने)। and so on.

Or :-

पेब्रयर बुश्य पेंदर (र्हे)। and so on.

Or :--

भेज विया होता (हा) | f. a. p.

Or :-

भेष-चर-वृक्ष-वृद्धः (दिः)। f. a. p.

PROBABILITY.

Present: I may be; Perhaps I shall be.

शुःवेश पर (or पर or प्रेर) विमुर (र्रे)। f. a p.

Or :-

भेष पर श्रेंत (र्रे)। f. a. p.

Or :-

प्रेन्स्रत्मा (म्)। f. a. p.

Past: I might be: Perhaps I would be.

ধ্র'-বীরা'' বহ' (or '' ঘহ' or '' ঘ্রহ') गुर'य'শীর' (বি) | and so on

भेत्यम श्री पाभेत (वें) | and so on.

Perfect: I might have been; Perhaps I would have been.

ধ্র'প্র'' বহ' (or ''' বহ' or বিহ') गुर-पार्थेर्' (र्हे)। and so on.

Or :--

भेदायर श्रेर्प पंरि (र्हे) | and so on.

HORTATIVE MOOD.

Present: I must be; I ought to be.

Past: I must have been; I ought to have been.

धेव पर निर्मेश पाधेव (वि)। and so on.

Or :--

लेब.राष्ट्र-इमाश. (श्र्)।

भेषायम् नुमें श्राप्तुमा (दि) | f. a. p.

Or :-

पेन पर उटाया पेन (र्वे) | and so on.

Or :-

भेदःयदे देण्या भेदः (दें)। and so on.

PURPOSIVE MOOD.

In order that I may or might be.

धेन पर त्युर पदे छैर (रें), or छैर रूं, or रेंन्स। f. a. p.

Or :-

ऑट मुंदे सुर (र्रे)। f. a. p.

Or :--

্ৰাবন (or মন or '''বু' or '''র্' or '''র্' or '''র') ব্যস্তুর্বনী ব্রীনা f. a. p. IMPERATIVE MOOD.

PRECATIVE MOOD.

Let me, etc. be.

भेव्यर हुना हेन। f. a. p.

PERMISSIVE MOOD.

Present: I am allowed to be.

भेष-प्रशक्ति। (में)। f. a. p.

Or :-

धोत्राह्म केंग में भिंद (र्हे)। and so on throughout.

OPTATIVE MOOD.

Would that I were; Oh that I were

भेष:पर:मुर:हेम्। f. a. p.

VERBAL NOUN.

पेद्रय or पेद्रयादे। Being; The being; To be.

SUPINE.

भेदरार or भेदर्। Tr be.

PARTICIPLES.

Present: 외국지 | Being. 최국지 | Not being. Past: 외국지 | Been. 레국지 | Not been.

Com. Perfect : พัร ฺฆฺฆัฐฺฆฺ | Having been. มิรฺฆฺพัฐฺฆฺ | Not having been.

Future: ਕਿੰਨਗੂ or ਕਿੰਨਗੂ। About ਐੱਕਟੰਗੂ or ਐੱਕਟੰਗੂ। Not about to be.

PERIPHRASTIC EXPRESSIONS.

धेवय or धेवयदे or वै।

Who or which is or was.

অন্ত্ৰামান্ত্ৰ or है। অন্ত্ৰামান্ত্ৰ or है।

Who will be, or is or are to be.

रमुमरे or है।

Which will be, or is or are to be.

ऑटक्युं दें व्य है। ऑटक्युं दें व्य है।

"रमुयरे or वै।

OTHER PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

Present.

प्यद्गयदे के त्या प्यद्गयदे नुस्या प्यद्गयद्गा प्यद्गदे । प्यद्गविद्गा प्यद्गया प्यद्गया

At the time of being; when, while, as .. am, is, are.

Being; as, since, when, after, while .. am, is, are.

 $\{ In \text{ or } by \text{ } being : if, when ... am, }$

Being.

Though, since, because ... am, is, are.

Of or for being.

Past.

শৈব-5। শৈব-বৃহ্য। শৌব-ঘৃহ্য।

Having been; as, since, when, after ... was, were.

Because, since, when ... was, were.

지국 지지 | As ... was, were.

지국 지지 | After, since, because, when .. was, were.

지국 지국 | If, when ... was, were.

INFINITIVES.

V. To have; To possess.

Same as Colloquial or Literary $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{7}$ To be present, To exist, save that it is conjugated with the subject in the Dative case with \mathbb{Q}^* Thus:—

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present: I have; I possess.

८७७५।

To me there is.

हिर्भायरुगा

To thee there is.

मिला थेर or तर्मा or थेर यारेर। To him there is.

And so on throughout.

VI.—Active, Transitive, 4-rooted Colloquial verb.

मार्नेट प To send.

Roots

Present : বার্নি Perfect : বার্নি Future : বার্নি Imperative : র্মি I

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present: I send.

टशम्बेर्ट्र.।

हिंद्र गुरुष महिंद्र ।

मिश्रमिट्ट ।

Periphrastic Present: I am sending.

दशमिंद्रिंट मी खेर्।

मिंद्राण्डिसमिद्धिर or बतुमा

मिंश मोर्नेट मी व्यन् or बनुमा or व्यन्य नेन।

N.B.—Pronouns are henceforth omitted, except where necessary to make the construction clear.

The construction is in the AGENTIVE, save where otherwise indicated.

Past: I sent.

755 | f. a. p.

Or :-

मन्द्रम्य प्रेत्।

স্ক্রিস্বা or occasionally ইন্ত or rarely (interrogatively) এন।

न्त्र मेर्

Or :--

ਸ਼੍ਰਵ: ਕੋਵਿ" | f. a. p.

Imperfect: I was sending.

Same as Periphrastic Present, context showing Tense; or

Perfect: I have sent.

Same as Past.

Pluperfect: I had sent.

Same as Past or Perfect.

Or, seldom used save at end of sentences:-

नर्दाक्षाः भेर

वर्टाव्या चेंद्र or दर्गा

नन्दानुसार्थिन or बनुना or धिन्दानेन।

Future: I shall send.

पहिंदः (or महिंदः) धेंदः। f. a. p.

Or :-

महिंद्रमी धीत्।

मोर्डेट मी दिनमा or देन or धेव।

मोर्नेट मी रेन or बरुमा or अव।

Or :--

ग्राइट अपेरिया I am (or have) to send.

And so f. a. p.

SUBJUNCTIVE AND CONDITIONAL MOODS.

Present: If.... I shall send.

(Present Root) "취기 기계 (or 기기) 때다 f. a. p.

Or :--

(Present Root) ত্রান্ট্রেন্স্রামের। and so on.

Past: If ... I would send.

(Perfect Root) ত্রান্স সমূদ্র মৌধু | and so on.

Or :--

(Perfect Root) "4" 4"55" (or 455") WE' f. a. p.

Perfect: If ... I would have sent.

(Perfect Root) "5" \J55 \Ji\J\j and so on.

Or :--

(Perfect Root) "4" 455 W or 455 4 or 455 4 or 455 4 f. a. p.

except that $\Im \Gamma$ is usually confined to the first person, and $\Im \Im$ used with the others.

POTENTIAL MOOD.

Present: I can send; am able to send.

महिंद प्रुव। f. a. p.

Or :--

मिर्नेट श्रुव व्याप्त | f. a. p.

Or :--

मिर्दे: इय मु चित्रं and so on.

Past: I could send.

मिर्हेट श्रुव दा भेव। and so on.

Perfect: I could have sent.

শূর্দ স্থ্র মার্ম and so on.

Or :--

मिर्नेट श्रुव या दर्मा f. a. p.

PROBABILITY.

Present: Perhaps I shall send; I may send; It is likely that I shall send.

স্ট্রিস্ট্র্রি ... (Either form of Simple Future).

Or :--

मिर्देट मी प्येष या ५५ | f. a. p.

Or :-

मार्नेट मा ध्येत द्वें । f. a. p.

Past: Perhaps I should send; I might send.

मारुमा हो ५ व ा प्याप्त मारुमा चार्च so on.

Or :--

मार्डमा सेर्ज मोर्डेट चेंटिं। f. a. p.

Or :--

म्बर्गाय के प्राप्त हैं। f. a. p.

Or :--

बर्द्ध के प्रति के हि. a. p.

Perfect: Perhaps I would have sent; I might have sent.

मार्डमा नुदान पार्टी | and so on.

Or :-

न्द्राच व्याप्त्र मात्र f. a. p.

Or :--

न्द्रान्य स्त्री f. a. p.

HORTATIVE MOOD

Present: I must send: I ought to send

··· यमिर्देट द्वींश f. a. p.

Or :--

यामिहिट द्रमें शिली भेरी and so on.

Or:-

··· वाचित्रं निकाणी भेता and so on.

Or vulgarly :-

"प्रामित्र मिंगि भेरि | and so on.

Also the following, sometimes used :-

... अम्मर्या थारेर।

I am (or have) to send.

··· व्यामात्रम् व्याप्ते ।

Thou art (or hast) to send.

He is (or has) to send.

Past: I must have sent; ought to have sent.

ा वानिहिट द्वींशाय (or vulgarly द्वींय) धेद | and so on.

Or :--

''ম্ম্রিম্রুম্' f. a. p., except that বুম' is usually confined to the 1st person, and ব্ৰুম্ম used with the others.

PURPOSIVE MOOD.

Present: In order that I may send.

मिर्देर पदे देवा f. a. p.

Past: In order that I might send.

नर्दान्त्रे रेंब्स्य। f. a. p.

IMPERATIVE MOOD

र्शेट or महिंदा Send.

N.B.—শ্রিনা (commonly but improperly ত্রিনা, or ইনামান্ত্রি, or ইনামান্ত্রি, or ত্রিনা, or will be added according to rule.

PRECATIVE MOOD.

Let me, etc. send.

ट्स.चर्ट्रिट.चर्थमः (कुर्चाः)।

मिंहा मोर्ने ए मार । ।

N.B.—The construction here is, "By me (or thee or him) a sending permit"

PERMISSIVE MOOD.

Present: I am allowed to send; I may send.

दशमित्र केंग। f. a. p., or मित्र केंग मि भेर। and so on.

Past: I was allowed to send; I might send.

दशमार्दे केना याधित। and so on.

Future: I shall be allowed to send.

दशमिंदि केंगि ऑट | f. a. p.

Or :--

दश महिंद केंग में ऑद | and so on.

N.B.—Here the construction is, "A sending by me is allowed, or was allowed, or will be allowed."

The following is more Bookish:-

८श.मोर्टेट.चश.क्रेम।

I may send.

हिंद् गुरेश मिंद्र नश्रक्षा

Thou mayest send.

मिंश मिंदि 'यश केम।

He may send.

OPTATIVE MOOD.

Present: Oh that I, etc. were sending, or might send.

दश'मोर्नेट' वेमा or दश'मोर्नेट'च' वेमा।

Or. better :-

दशमिर्देट व देवाया छ।

Past: Oh that I, etc. had sent.

दश नदर वेना or नदर न वेना।

Or. better :-

दश्यन्द्रम् व केमायाका।

PARTICIPLES.

Present:

महिंद य।

Sending.

Perfect:

2557

Sent.

Com. Perfect : বচ্চত্র থাব্য |

Having sent.

Future:

मॉर्नेट कुं or मार्नेट कुं भेर मा)
मॉर्नेट देवीं or मार्नेट देवीं भेर मार्नेट के ब्रिकेट किंदि के ब्रिकेट के किंदि के किंदी किंदी के किंदी किं

ACTIVE OR PERIPHRASTIC.

महिट अमिन or महिट यहे or महिट यहें। He who sends.

यर्ट्सम्बर or यर्ट्स्यरी।

He who sent.

माइट स्नामन ।

माइट सामन ।

He who will send, or is to send.

See regarding Active and Periphrastic Participles generally, § 38, V. D.

OTHER PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

Present.

| मॉर्-हें। | Sending. | |
|--------------|--|--|
| गर्नेट:नश | Sending; Because, since, when, whilesending. | |
| मिर्दे स्था | Sending; at, for, though sending. | |
| मोर्नेट मीश। | Though, because sending. | |
| मर्हिर-पथा | As since sendina | |

मोर्नेट मोर्नेट थ। Whilst sending. मार्नेट वा If, when, though . . send, sending. etc., etc. Past. 75다 월 1 Having sent. 775.741 Sent; because, since, when . . sent. 755.441 Having sent. 75C.7.01 यर्टानीश। Because, though ... sent. 755.41 If, when, though ... sent. 7557141 755755 As, since, because, having ... sent. 122.2.01 etc., etc. SUPINES. महिंद्य। To send.गर्ने मुं। मार्डेट थ। मर्हिट थ। मॉर्नेट मदे देवाया For sending. नॉर्न्ट मुदे र्ने ला

नोर्दे अदे देव वा

VERBAL NOUNS.

| गर्नेदः व । | |
|-------------------|----------------------------------|
| गर्ने मन्द्री | Sending; the sending; a sending. |
| गर्नेद ःष। | |
| 75571 |) |
| न्द्रप्तः दे। | The having sent. |
| गर्ने-नु। |] |
| नार्ट्यु । | |
| गर्ने कु दे। | The being about to send. |
| नातर-कुं'रे। | |

Infinitives.

| Present: | শ্র্রিমে | To send. |
|-----------|---|-------------------------------------|
| | מקבים | |
| Perfect : | यर्ट्स्य प्रमा | To have sent. |
| | नर्ट व्या | |
| | मार्ग्स्य। मार्ग्स्य | |
| Future: | मार्ग्यकु : भेष्य । मार्ग्य : भेष्मु : भेष्य । | To be about to send, or to be sent. |
| | मित्रिंदःमायःधिक्य। | |

VII.—Active, Transitive, 4-Rooted LITERARY Verb 7557

ROOTS.

Present: निर्देश Perfect: निर्देश Future: निर्देश

Imperative: ब्रिंग or महिंद भ्री

.N.B.—Pronouns are omitted, but the construction is in the AGENTIVE, save where otherwise indicated.

The NTTY or placed over the reduplicated final consonant, or final vowel of a verb, is also omitted.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present: I send.

지 f. a. p.

Or, Intensively:-

मॉर्डिंग्सर हिंद्रं f. a. p.

Periphrastically:-

대중도 취약했다 or 역동제 | I am

제중도 취약했다 or 역동제 | Thou art | sending.

제중도 취약했다 or 역동제 or 현존되다 He is .

Elegant but obsolete form :-

मार्नेट मिल्दासकेश।

महिंद्र मलेव मार्त ।

मर्हिट मलेश सकेश or महित or सकेश या अव।

Or :--

Same, substituting at for sagi

Or, Respectfully:-

वन्नामित्रः मीतः अन्।

मिन्मिर्टिमीन सद्या

मिट्न महिट्न मिन्न मिन्न or सदय or मिन्न स्थाप करें

```
Past: I sent.
```

755' f. a. p.

Or :--

नर्द्रायाधिक।

ন্দ্ৰেন্দ্ৰ্ or occasionally and chiefly interrogatively মীৰ্

Or :-

755 NE' | f. a. p.

Imperfect: I was sending.

Same as Periphrastic Present, the context showing Tense.

Or !--

7557 4 and so on, as in Past.

Or :-

नन्दः विद्याप्य प्रमाणित्। f. a. p.

Perfect: I have sent.

Same as Past.

Pluperfect: I had sent.
Same as Past, or:—

मनमञ्जू

नर्मः भेर or पर्ना।

वनदर्भेर or बरुमा or भेर्यस्रा

Also, but seldom used, and only at end of sentences :—

न्द्रम्थितः or वर्ना।

नर्दानुसार्येद् or पर्नुमा or व्यद्गाय देन।

Future: I shall send.

455 f. a. p.

Or :--

मिर्दे पर त्युर। f. a. p.

महिंद:य-ज] f. a. p.

Or :---

मार्ट ऑट | f. a. p.

And note the following:-

माऽट कु थेव।

I am (or have) to send.

শ্বিদ্ধু বিবৃশা or interrogatively ৠবা Thou art (or hast) to send.
শ্বিদ্ধু ৠবা

He is (or has) to send.

SUBJUNCTIVE AND CONDITIONAL MOODS.

Present: If... I shall send.

(Present Root) " \(\) (any of the above Future forms), f. a. p.

Past: If ... I would send.

Same as Present, save that in the Introductory Clause the Perfect Root is used: or:—

(Perfect Root) " 5" 755 7 W and so on.

Perfect: If. . I would have sent.

Same as Past.

Or :-

(Perfect Root) "즉"지기자기 and so on.

POTENTIAL MOOD.

Present: I can send.

महिंद्या f. a. p.

Or :--

मार्नेर वर वुरु | f. a. p.

Or :--

मिर्नेट **मु**ब र्खेट | f. a. p.

Past: | I could send.

मॉर्नेट प्रवासिट ! f. a. p.

महिंद्र न्यू शुक्ष र । f. a. p.

Or :--

मिर्दि: श्वन पा भेत्। and so on.

Or :--

महिंदिन वुश्राया भेव। and so on.

Perfect: I could have sent.

मिर्देर मुद्रान्य भेद। and so on.

Or :--

मॉर्नेट पर जहां पार्थे | and so on.

PROBABILITY.

Present: I may send; Perhaps I shall send.

ਬੁ-ਕੇਬਾ ' नार्टा | f. a. p., or नार्टि ऑट | f. a. p.

Or :--

शुः वेशः । मोर्नेट यर त्यु र | f. a. p.

Or :--

मिर्हिट मर श्रेत्। f. a. p.

Or :--

मिर्हिट श्रेर् | f. a. p.

Past: I might send.

নাইট শ্বীব খেলা and so on.

Or :--

As in Past Tense, Potential Mood.

Perfect: I might have sent.

मिर्देट घुन सेंद्र | f. a. p.

Or :--

महिंद्रियायधेर्। and so on.

Or :--

मिर्दे श्रेन पर्भेत्। and so on.

to send.

HORTATIVE.

Present: I ought to send: I must send.

··· यामिर्देट मर द्रमें रा f. a. p.

. Or:—

मॉर्नेट'यर'मुदें | f. a. p.

Or :--

मार्ट्स मुं

I am (or have)

শাস্ম নু বিশ্বা or interrogatively ঐবা Thou art (or hast)

चारटासी.लूब।

He is (or has)

Past: I ought to have sent.

··· মে'নাইন'নহ'ব্নীহা'নাখীব। and so on.

PURPOSIVE MOOD.

So that I may send, or might send.

महिंदः मदे हैं कर्। महिंदः मदे हैं करा। महिंदः मदे हैं करा।

Each f. a. p.

PRECATIVE MOOD.

Let me, etc. send.

महिंदिन र खुमा or मार्क्ट ।

Or :--

मोर्टेट.र्टे.किमा. or मोर्थट.।

PERMISSIVE MOOD.

Present: I am allowed to send: I may send.

मिर्दे मार्थ केंमि | f. a. p.

Or :-

मार्ने द्राया केंग मा भेर | and so on.

Past: I was allowed to send: I might send.

मिर्देट प्रश्कें मा स्थित | and so on.

Or:-

महिंद नशकें मा या भेरी | and so on.

Future: I shall be allowed to send.

मार्टियश केंग।

Or :--

मिर्दि पश्चिम् यम् त्युम् । f. a. p.

Or :--

मिर्हेट नशकें मिर्ग्यर है। f. a. p.

OPTATIVE MOOD.

Present: Oh that I, etc. were sending, or might send.

मिर्हेट व रेड स इट । f. a. p.

Or :--

महिंद वस विमा हैगा। f. a. p.

Past: Oh that I, etc. had sent.

मित्रियरम्बुरक्षरः। f. a. p.

Or -

वर्ग्डन केम्। f. a. p.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

बॅटः। बेटःबेमा मोर्टेटः। मोर्टेटःबेमा स्टेटःबेमा

Send.

ম'নার্নি' (জ্বি।।
"'এ'নার্নি'বেশ্নম্'র্নার্ম।
" Do not send.

N.B.— ব্না is not used with ব্নাম।

PARTICIPLES.

Present:

महिंद न।

Sending.

חקבים ן

755.27.21

Perfect:

Sent.

य5ट डेब्स्स । S

755.51

Com. Perfect : বচ্চ'ব'মিব'ম।

ารตาพิสาม Having sent.

गर्नेट यर द्युर य।

गर्नेट यर मुन्य।

मार्ट-गु।

महिंद्र-वर-मात्रक्ष-दा।

About to send.

ACTIVE, PERIPHRASTIC, OR SUBSTANTIVE.

महिंद स्राप्ति ।

Future:

महिंद चेद स्मामन।

मिर्देर याचे ।

महिंद छेर या

गर्नेट छेर य ये।

नर्दः स्मानक्।

He who sends; the sender; the sending person.

He who sent. The sent.

Or the following simple construction may be used :-

See generally, § 38, V. D.

OTHER PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

As in Colloquial.

VERBAL NOUN, OR ADJECTIVE.

নার্নিনের (বি)।

নার্নিনের (বি)।

নার্নিনের বি)।

নার্নিনের বি)।

নার্নিনের বিত্তা

নার্নিনের বিত্তা

নার্নিনের বিত্তা

নার্নিনের বিত্তা

স্থিব মা (বি)।

নার্নিনের বিত্তা

স্থিব মা (বি)।

SUPINES.

मार्नेट पर ।

मार्नेट पर ।

To send

महिंद्र मित्र हें हु। महिंद्र मित्र हें हु स्था महिंद्र मित्र हें हु स्टु।

For sending.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

महेंद्र य। Present: To send. 755.41 **コラに、おく、コー** To have sent. यरटायाध्या Past: カラケ・カ・ヨタ・ム 1 75571 मार्देर-चर-गु-व। मार्डेट ना To be about to send; to be sent. मर्दिर यर मात्रश्राय। Future: गर्रेट.चर.पंग्रेर.च।

VIII.—Passive, 4-Rooted Colloquial Verb 제5다고, 제주다.

मोर्टि-क्यु प्येष-दा।

Roots.

As in Active Verb No. VI.

N.B.—The construction throughout is in the Objective or Accusative case, with or without A

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present: I am being sent.

गर्नेद्रमी र्थेर।

महिंद्र मी स्पेर or तरुमा or सेर्पर रेरा

Past: I was sent.

यर्ट्य येव।

ন্দ্ৰ নি ক্ৰিল or occ. ইন্ or interr. ঐব। ন্দ্ৰ নি নি কিল্ল or rarely ঐব।

Or :--

지5다·Ñ다 | f. a. p.

Imperfect: I was being sent.

Same as Present, but with adverb or other context showing Tense.

Perfect: I have been sent.

बार्ट स्प्रिंग and so on.

Or, same as Past.

Or the following, though seldom used save at end of sentence:

755.48.25 and so on.

Pluperfect: I had been sent.

Same as Perfect.

Future: I shall be sent.

As in Active Verb No. VI.

SUBJUNCTIVE AND CONDITIONAL MOODS.

Present: If.. I shall be sent.

Past: If..I would be sent.

As in Active Verb No. VI.

Perfect: If .. I would have been sent.

POTENTIAL MOOD.

Present: I can be sent.

Past: I could be sent.

Perfect: I could have been sent.

As in Active Verb No. VI.

PROBABILITY.

Present: I may perhaps be sent.

Past: I might

As in Active Verb No. VI.

HORTATIVE MOOD.

Present: I ought to be sent; I must be sent.

वर्द्धा के कार्य and so on.

Or :--

नर्द्रमें आणे भेता and so on.

Or:-

न्दर्भेश। f. a. p.

Or :--

न5८'द्वेंश'र्थेट'। f. a. p.

Past: I ought to have been sent.

ব্দেশ্রামান্ত্রা and so on.

Or :--

नर्द्रभाषानुदा and so on.

PURPOSIVE MOOD.

Present: In order that I may be sent.

Past: In order that I mig. I have t.

As in Active Verb

No. VI.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

मॉर्नेट लेगा मॉर्नेट मं चेरा

Be sent.

यहदःयः वे**द्**।

अमिर्दिम्बन्धित्।

Do not be sent.

PRECATIVE MOOD.

महिंद (or यहर) पद्म। Let me, etc., be sent.

PERMISSIVE MOOD.

Present: I am allowed to be sent.

नार्हेट (or नहर) देना ने भेर् | and so on

And so on conjugating ইন্ম্ন regularly.

Or :--

मार्नेट (or निर्देश) केमा। f. a. p.

OPTATIVE MOOI.

Present: Oh that I were being sent.

मिर्नेट (ग) विमा f. a. p.

Or, better :-

मार्नेद्र के वा या खा f. a. p.

Past: Oh that I had been sent.

지5다 (지') - 여기 f. a. p.

Or, better:-

पन्द केना पाछा। f. a. p.

PARTICIPLES.

Present:

मार्टिया

Being sent.

Past:

Note The Been sent.

Com. Perfect: \7557 \477 | Having been sent.

मोर्हर कु।

Future:

শ্চন্ট্র | About to be sent.

নগ্দ শূ।

PERIPHRASTIC.

नर्द्रभावन् ।

75577

महर समिन्।

नर्-कुरी

He who is or was sent.

He who will be sent.

Or the following simple construction may be used:—

दशन्तर्मामन में हो है।

Or :--

दश'व5ट'वदे'से'रे।

The man who is or was sent by me.

हिंद्र गुरुषमा

Or :--

हिंत क्षेत्र मानम कुरी द्ये करी।

The book which will be, or is to be, sent by thee.

OTHER PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

지5다 월 1

Being sent, having been sent.

Because, since, when .. was or were sent.

755.421

45C.4.441

Having been sent.

755-41

75C.7.41

755.7.25.1

다.다.다시시 |

नर्टनीश।

If, when, though..was or were sent.

As, since, because..was or were sent; having been sent.

Because, though..was or were sent.

SUPINES.

गर्रेट चुँ।

ग5**-**कु।

य5F कुं।

मद्दः मूँ

गर्नेट मुदे रेंबय।

For being sent.

To be sent.

VERBAL NOUNS.

यहरायाहै। यहरायाधिकायाहै। The being sent.

The having been sent.

मार्ने कुः रे। मार्ने कुः रे।

The being about to be sent.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

महिंदः कुः प्येषः य । महिंदः कुः प्येषः य ।

नर्म्यु भेर्य।

मार्गा से से मार्ग

The same or :—

To be sent.

To be about to be sent.

IX.—Active, one-rooted Colloquial Verb AFTA | To see.

Root throughout হার্ট্র

N.B.—The construction is in the AGENTIVE, except where otherwise indicated

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present: I see.

अर्थे='\ f. a. p.

Periphrastic: I am seeing.

सर्वेट मी भेर ।

अर्बेट मी थेर् or २५म।

सर्वेदःमी र्थेद् or दर्म or र्थेद्यः देत्।

Past: I saw.

अवेट वुट * or अवेट शेट | f. a. p.

* N.B.-35 for first person, 957 for the others.

सर्वेट माधीव।

মার্লিনের্না or occ. ইব্ or rarely, chiefly interr. অব।

सर्वेट्यरेन ,, दनुमा ,, धेव।

Imperfect: I was seeing.

Same as Periphrastic Present, context showing Tense.

Perfect: I have seen.

Same as Past.

. Pluperfect: I had seen.

Same as Past or Perfect.

Or, seldom used save at end of sentence:-

रार्वेट व्या वित् | and so on.

Future: I shall see.

मर्हेन्फिन्। f. a. p.

Or :--

अर्थेट्स भेजा and so on.

Note also the following:-

राज्ञ मुं प्येव। I am (or have) to see.

And so on.

Also :--

মর্মিমান্দ্র I am (or have) to see.

And so f. a. p.

SUBJUNCTIVE AND CONDITIONAL MOODS.

Present: If .. I shall see.

(Present Root) ত্ৰে মইন্নী মীৰ। and so on.

Or :--

(Present Root) ''국' 정통 전기 f. a. p.

Past: If .. I would see.

(Perfect Root) "写" 到氧元亚丁 f. a. p.

(Perfect Root) ত্র্তান্ত্র্রান্ত্রান্তন্ত্রান্ত্রান্ত্রান্ত্রান্তন্ত্রান্তন্ত্রান্তন্ত্রান্তন্তন্ত্রান্তন্তন্ত্রান্তন্তন্তন্তনালনে স্থানিল্লান্তন্তনালনে স্থানিল্লান্তনালনে স্থানিল্লানিললালনিল্লানিললালনিল্লানিললালনিল্লানিললালনিল

Perfect: If .. I would have seen.

(Perfect Root) " 4" A F T T W 1 and so on.

Or :--

(Perfect Root) ্র মর্দ্রমন্দ্রা f. a. p.

POTENTIAL MOOD.

Similar to construction in AFTA | To send, No. VI.

PROBABILITY.

Present: Perhaps I shall see: I may see.

Same as in 1755.7 To send, No. VI.

Past: Perhaps I would see: I might see.

अर्थेट्य प्येष्यत् [f. a. p.

Or :-

अर्थेट य भेद द में । f. a. p.

Or :--

म्बिम् चुन्दा अर्थेट स्ट्रिट | f., a. p.

Or :-

गुडेमा चुर्न अर्थेट य प्रेव्। f. a. p.

Or :--

Perfect: Perhaps I would or might have seen.

सर्वेह पार्थे र पार्थ f. a. p.

Or :--

अर्थेट न स्पेर् दर्में। f. a. p.

Or:--

नाडेना ने देन कार्येट मार्थे | and so on.

HORTATIVE.

Present : I ought to see : I must see.

Or:-

द्राया अर्थे द्रार्भेश मुंधित। and so on.

Or :--

... तासर्वेट द्वीशच्चिट | f. a. p.

Or :--

Or :--

পর্টু নূর্ট পুর।

I am (or have) to see.

And so on.

मर्बेट भारेता

I am (or have) to see.

And so, f. a. p.

Past: I ought to have seen; must have seen.

द्राध्यसम्बद्धाः दर्भेश्वाः भारते so on.

Or :--

'''মার্স্র্রি'বৃদ্ধি'ব্রুর'। f. a. p. But see note re ব্রুর' on p. 354.

PURPOSIVE MOOD.

Present and Past: In order that I may or might see.

सर्वेद: प्रते देवा f. a. p.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

शर्बेट. (ब्रिमा)।

See.

मामर्बेट (लेमा)।

Do not see.

PRECATIVE MOOD.

भ्रार्थेट.चर्चिनी. (श्रुची)।

Let me, etc. see.

PERMISSIVE MOOD.

Present: I am allowed to see; I may see.

संबद्धा f. a. p. and tenses.

Or :-

मर्श्वि केंग में भिर् | and so on.

And so on, conjugating ক্র্মান্ত regularly.

The following is more Bookish:—

सञ्चानशास्त्रमा f. a. p.

OPTATIVE MOOD.

Present and Past: Oh that I were seeing, or had seen.

शर्वर, वेचा। श्रविद्यः विमा। f. a. p. Or better :-सर्वेट व केना या छ।

PARTICIPLES.

Present:

মর্থ্রী বা

Seeing.

Perfect:

श्रवट्-न।

Seen.

Com. Perfect: মর্নির্মান Having seen.

Future:

श्रव्या

About to see.

ACTIVE, PERIPHRASTIC, OR SUBSTANTIVE.

मर्वेट सम्बर (२)। अर्थेर प (रे)। शर्वर पर्ग सर्वेद कु दे। अर्थेट आमन (रे)।

He who sees or saw. The seer.

He who will see. The seer.

See also the other examples under this head in निर्देश To send, No. VI.

OTHER PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

Present.

| र्श्वर-स्रे। | Seeing. | |
|-------------------------|--|--|
| सब्दे: मध्य । | Seeing; because, since, when, whileam, is, or are seeing. | |
| মর্লু:ম'মা | Seeing; at, for, thougham, is, or are seeing. | |
| মর্থী-বাম্ম |) | |
| सर्वेट-य-थ। | As, since am, is or are seeing. | |
| सर्हे-ता | | |
| सर्वेट-सर्वेट-त्य । | $\left\{egin{array}{l} Whilst\ see ing. \end{array} ight.$ | |
| सर्वेद:मैश। | Though seeing. | |
| सर्वे ट व । | If, when, thougham, is or are seeing. | |
| Pa | st. | |
| सर्हेथंश। |) | |
| सर्वेर-वुर-ध्रे। | $igg\{ Having \ seen.$ | |
| शर्बेट-वैदःयश । | Seen; because, since, whenwas or were seen. | |
| सर्वे : वृह्म । |) | |
| सब्दू: विद्यायम्। | $\left\langle Having\ seen. ight.$ | |
| सर्वे द 'वुद'व्। | If, when, though was or were seen. | |

seen.

भहंट.वैट.मुश.।

शर्वेट.वैट.च.ज।

शर्वेट-विट:व:५८:1

शर्बेट.वैट.च.त्रश्र

Having seen; as, since, when, because..was or were seen.

Because, though .. was or were

SUPINES.

| মই ন। |) |
|----------------------|-------------------------|
| श्रुंट.चैं। | $\left. ight\}$ To see. |
| शब्दाल। |] |
| शर्वेट.च.ज। | |
| मर्चेट मदे देव या | For seeing. |
| मर्चेट कुँदै दें तथा | J |

VERBAL NOUNS OR ADJECTIVES.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Present : মর্দ্রা

To see.

Perfect : মর্লু-বু-বা

To have seen.

Future : মর্থিনেক্রুট্মির্মা

To be about to see; To be seen.

X.—Neuter, One-Rooted Colloquial Verb 5키유기 To be glad, To rejoice.

Root 573 | throughout.

Conjugated throughout like Colloquial স্মৃতিত To see, save that in the forms in অতিত and অতিত the auxiliary particle is আ instead of নী, while the Imperative is নামত নিত্ত (উনা) or নামত কি বিশা, or the Literary নামত নামত নিনা Rejoice, Be glad.

The construction throughout is in the Nominative, save that in the Hortative Mood it is in the Dative with A, as in \overline{A} $\overline{$

XI.—Neuter, One-Rooted LITERARY Verb 5737 To be glad, To rejoice.

Root 543 throughout.

N.B.—The construction is in the Nominative case, except where otherwise indicated. The ALAST is omitted.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present: I am glad: I rejoice.

न्माद। f. a. p.

Or, intensively:-

न्मद्रसम् निष्या f. a. p.

Periphrastic: I am rejoicing.

न्माद्रायाः विद्

न्नाद च र्जेन।

दमाद मार्थेर or त्रुमा or सेर्प्स रेर्।

Or :--

ร्माद भे भें प्र and so on; or र्माद में भें । and so on.

Or :-

नमाद मार्थेव।

त्नाद पत्ना or occ. chiefly interr. पेत्।

नमाद यः भेद।

Or :-

ব্ৰাব 'অ' অব। and so on.

Or, seldom used now:—

न्याद प्रविदः (or विदः) मन्द्र।

रमाद प्रवेष (or विद्र) सकेश or म्रद्र or सकेश रास्त्रेषा

Past: I rejoiced: I was glad.

र्माद शें⊏'। f. a. p.

Or :--

त्नाद चर मुर्दे । f. a. p.

Or :--

ব্ৰাব্যবস্মুস্যান্দ্ৰীৰ। and so on.

Imperfect: I was rejoicing.

Same as Present, context indicating Tense.

Perfect: I have rejoiced.

Same as Past.

Pluperfect: I had rejoiced.

रमार पर मुर रें। f. a. p.

Or, though not common:

र्मार कर बुका भेरि | and so on.

Future: I shall rejoice: I shall be glad.

रमाद सिंद । f. a. p.

Or :-

त्नाद:नर:दगुर। f. a. p.

Or :--

বৃশাব ক্রু তের | I am (or have) to rejoice.

And so on.

SUBJUNCTIVE AND CONDITIONAL MOODS..

Present: If .. I shall rejoice.

(Present Root) "국" 국제국 고자 교 및 f. a. p.

Or:--

(Present Root) " 4" 593 753 | f. a. p.

(Present Root) ত্রান্থ্র বিষয় কি. a. p.

Past: If .. I would rejoice.

(Perfect Root) ত্রান্থ্র নাম বিশ্বর নাম and so on.

Or :--

(Perfect Root) ज्रान्यद्युर्दे f. a. p.

Perfect: If .. I would have rejoiced.

POTENTIAL MOOD.

Present: I can rejoice or be glad.

न्मद मुद्रा f. a. p.

Or :--

र्माद पर वृद्ध। f. a. p.

Or :--

न्माद ख्राचेंदा f. a. p.

Past: I could rejoice.

Same as Present.

Or :--

द्माद पर बुद्धा या भेद। and so on.

Or:-

दमार व्रुव या भेत्। and so on.

Or :-

न्मद्रश्चरार्शेटा f. a. p.

Or :--

न्मद्र न्द्रा सेंट्रं। f. a. p.

Perfect: I could have rejoiced.

त्नाद प्रतासार्थेत्। and so on.

Or:-

त्माद पर वृद्धारा भेत्। and so on.

Or :---

न्नाद खुन यादन्ना। f. a. p.

Or :--

न्माद प्रशास तुमा। f. a. p.

PROBABILITY.

Present: Perhaps I shall rejoice: I may rejoice.

श्च.पुरा...रेबोद.चर.पंग्रीर।

Or :--

श्र-वेश...रमाद.चर.च।

Or :-

शु:वेश: : नगव:र्थिट ।

Or :—

नमायःयरःश्री

Or :--

नगरशेर।

f. a. p.

Past : Perhaps I would or might rejoice. ব্যুব্যুব্যুব্যু

Perfect: Perhans I would or might bear we

Perfect: Perhaps I would or might have rejoiced. 취임 형 기자기 and so on.

HORTATIVE MOOD.

Present: I ought to rejoice; I must rejoice.

ायान्यादान्य प्रत्योहा f. a. p.

Or :--

र्माद पर्ज f. a. p.

Past: I ought to have rejoiced.

ं भार्यात्यर र्नोशयधित। and so on.

PURPOSIVE.

Present: In order that I may rejoice.

 주제요' 교육 ' 주제'
 Or :—

 주제요' 교육 ' 주제'
 f. a. p.

 주제요' 교육 ' 출출 ' 주기
 or :—

 주제요' 교육 ' 급행 ' 고려요' 구취'
 주제요' 고려요' 급행 ' 고려요' ' 고려요'

Past: In order that I might rejoice. Same as first three forms of Present.

Or:— निप्त-पर-मुर-पति-निन्तु। f. a. p.

PRECATIVE MOOD.

Let me, etc. rejoice.

지지: 전투 () f. a. p. 지지: 등록 () f. a. p. 지지: 등록 () f. a. p. 지지: 전투 () f. a. p. 지지: 등록 () f. a. p. 지지: 전투 () f. a. p. 지지: 전투 () f. a. p.

PERMISSIVE MOOD.

Present: I am allowed to rejoice; I may rejoice.

… भार्नाद नश केंना। f. a. p.

Past: I was allowed to rejoice; I might rejoice.

ে নের্ন্ব বর্ষ রিনান শীর। and so on.

OPTATIVE MOOD.

Oh that I were glad or rejoicing.

न्माद व रे अ उ र ।

Or :-

न्नात् नर मुरु व छार ।

Or:-

न्माय प्रमा हिमा।

f. a. p

IMPERATIVE.

नगद यर मुर लेग।

Or :-

न्नाय पर ना

Or :--

... यान्याय वर नर्वोहा।

Rejoice, Be glad.

सरमार।

Or :-

नमायः सर्मायम् सः विमा।

Or :--

रमाय यर में छ।

Or:-

ः त्रान्नाद वर क्रीन्नींक।

Do not rejoice. Be not glad.

PARTICIPLES.

Present: 5

र्वाद न।

Rejoicing.

্বিন্ত্র ক্রিন্

न्याद र्शेट ।

brace Rejoiced.

Com. Perfect: ব্ৰাব্ৰের্ম্ব্রা Having rejoiced.

रमायः यरः यमुक्यः य । रमायः यरः यमुक्यः य ।

Future:

न्त्रतः चुः येवः य । न्त्रतः चुः यः । About to rejoice.

ACTIVE, PERIPHRASTIC, OR SUBSTANTIVE.

न्माद आयन्।

र्नार न स्रिन्साम्य ।

न्माद-च-धेर्-म।

He who rejoices or is glad. The rejoicer.

रमार कर स्मानन।

नुमादायाच्यान्यायीक्यान्।

He who rejoiced, or was glad.

Matt. xi. 14. न्यातः कुः भेद्रयः दे।

Matt. xi. 3. नगद नर द्युर र रे।

Rom. viii. 36. 543-453-45]

He who is about to rejoice, or will, or is to, rejoice.

OTHER PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

Present.

Same as in अव्दान To see, No. IX.

Past.

Same as in AFT To see, No. IX, substituting Lat for Jr, and Lat taking 5 instead of 8]

VERBAL NOUN OR ADJECTIVE.

न्माद:य: (वै)। नमाद:य: (वै)। Rejoicing; A, or the rejoicing.

The having rejoiced.

The being about to rejoice,

SUPINES.

रमाय पर।

Or:--

To rejoice or be glad.

नगदः ।

त्माद नदि र्नेष (or रेनिय or दुरिन्तु)। For rejoicing.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Present: 57371

To rejoice or be glad.

Past:
ব্নাব্ ক্রম্মা

To have rejoiced or been glad.

र्नातः यरः द्युरः य।

Future: 주피국'지국'피크되'리 | To be about to rejoice or be glad.

र्गाद पर गुरा

XII.—Passive 4-Rooted, LITERARY Verb निर्देश जा निर्देश To be sent.

N.B.—The construction throughout is in the OBJECTIVE DATIVE case in A

Otherwise it is the same as the Active Literary Verb 75.7 To send, No. VII. as far as and including the Potential Mood.

HORTATIVE MOOD.

Present: I ought to be sent; I must be sent.

यत्रः (or मोर्नेरः) यरः द्रमें श f. a. p.

Or :--

महिंद न्य है। f. a. p.

Past: I ought to have been sent.

निर्दा (or निर्दा) निर्देशियाधीय। and so on. Then it is again similar to Verb No. VII. as far as and including the Optative Mood.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

| | THE BURELLY IN THOOD. | |
|--------------------------------|-----------------------|----------|
| मोर्नेट यर मुर विमा | | |
| ন্ট্র-ঘশ-শু। | Be sent. | |
| ··· यमिद्रिय र न् ष्रि। | | |
| महिंदायर सादमुर विमा | | |
| महिंदियर श्रेष्ठि। | } Do not i | be sent. |
| भार्नेट्यरक्षिन्न् | | |
| | | |

PARTICIPLES.

| Present: | न्द्रिया | $igg\} \ \ Being \ sent.$ |
|----------------|--|---------------------------|
| | न5ट:न। न5ट:बॅर:न। न5ट:बेर:न। | |
| Com. Perfect : | नन्दः नः प्येषः स। नन्दः कंदः नः प्येषः स। नन्दः ज्ञेषः सः प्येषः स। | brace Having been sent. |

নার্নি-মেন-মেন্ত্র-ম।
নার্নি-মেন-মেন্ত্র-ম।
দার্নি-ম্র-মেন্ত্র-ম।
দার্নি-ম্র-মেন্ত্র-ম।
দার্নি-ম্র-মিন-মা

About to be sent.

PERIPHRASTIC.

He who or that which is or was sent.

Matt. xi. 3. मिर्नेट्यर (त्युर्य (ते or के))। मान्द्रय (ते or के)।

Rom. viii. 36. मॉर्न्ट्र यु. यु. (दे. or के)। मॉर्न्ट्र यु. (दे. or के)।

Matt. xi. 14. मॉर्नेट कु प्येव प (ने or के)।

He who or that which, will be, or is to be sent.

PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

Same as in Colloquial Passive Verb স্ট্রি To be sent,

SUPINES.

महिंद्यक्षः । महिंद्यक्षः च्चाः व महिंद्यक्षः च्चाः चति हेत्यः । महिंद्यक्षः च्चायते हेत्यः । महिंद्यक्षः च्चायते हेत्यः । महिंद्यक्षेत्रे हेत्यः । महिंद्यक्षेत्रे हेत्यः । महिंद्यक्षेत्रे हेत्यः ।

To be sent.

For being sent.

VERBAL NOUNS.

मॉर्नेट यर युः य है। मॉर्नेट यर व्युक्त य है। मॉर्नेट कुं औदाय है।

The being about to be sent.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

To be sent.

To have been sent.

XIII.—Active, 2-Rooted Colloquial Verb A To go

Roots.

Present:

दर्गा

Perfect:

श्राट. or होब।

Future:

दर्गा

Imperative :

(ইনি or ইনি or ইন।) With Particle (প্রিন or বিদা or ইন।) when appropriate.

N.B.—The construction throughout is in the Nominative case.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present: I go.

প্রী। f. a. p.

Periphrastic: I am going.

वर्गें में छर।

वर्ने ने जिंदा or वर्ना।

वर्चे ने भेर or वर्मा or सर्दा

Past: I went.

ब्राँद or धुन्। f. a. p.

श्रामायाया

মিন্সান্দ্র or occ. ইব্ or rarely, chiefly interr. এব

र्शेट परेर ,, दरुषा ,, धेरा

Or:-

युन्याधीन। and so on.

Imperfect: I was going.

Same as Periphrastic Present, context showing Tense.

Perfect: I have gone.

Same as Past.

Pluperfect: I had gone.

Same as Past.

Or, seldom used save at end of sentences:-

মান্ত্র অব্যাত্ত and so on.

Or :--

धेव वश भेर्। and so on.

Future: I shall go.

त्र्ने ऑट । f. a. p.

Or :-

त्र्मा मा Wal and so on.

Or:--

ः अद्रेत्या भेतृ। I am (or have) to go.

f. a. p.

Or:-

तिर्में मुं भेद | and so on. I am (or have) to go.

SUBJUNCTIVE AND CONDITIONAL MOODS.

Present: If ... I shall go.

(Present Root) "A" RTWI f. a. p.

(Present Root) "व् प्रमाभाष्य। and so on.

Past: If ... I would go.

(Perfect Root)...Same as Present, context indicating Tense.

Or :--

(Perfect Root) ত্র সূত্র (or ব্রুর্ম) অর্ and so on.

Perfect: If ... I would have gone.

(Perfect Root) ত্রাম্মান (or দ্বীর্মা) আঁব্ and so on.

Or :--

(Perfect Root) "] (or 3] () [f. a. p.

Or :--

(Perfect Root) "즉" ॲ도 (or 결국) 독주기 f. a. p.

POTENTIAL MOOD.

Present: I can go.

दम् प्रा f. a. p.

Or :--

दर्ने प्रुयः भेटा f. a. p.

Or :--

त्रें धून गुं भें। and so on.

Past: I could go.

त्र्ने मृत्रायाध्ये and so on.

Perfect: I could have gone.

त्में घ्रा संभेर्। and so on.

Or:-

दर्ने दुरम् दर्म। f. a. p.

PROBABILITY.

Present: Perhaps I shall go; I may go.
দাইনা নুব্ৰ শ্ৰেন্স্মিনা f. a. p.

महिना ने देन प्रेमि प्रेम | and so on.

Or :-

दम्मिषेद्रयद्र। f. a. p.

Or :--

दर्नों मी भेर दर्ने । f. a. p.

Past: Perhaps I might go.

मार्डेमा में देन में भेदाय (or बेंद्रिय) औदा and so on.

Or :--

धैदाया (or ब्रिटाया) धोदायायह्य f. a. p.

Or :--

धुक्प (or श्रेट्य) ध्रेक्यम्। f. a. p.

Perfect: Perhaps I might have gone.

मिठेमा ने ने न से प्रेक्स (or र्क्स न न) से न | and so on.

Or :-

धुक्तम (or श्राटन) ल्यूनम्बद्धा f. a. p.

Or :--

ष्ट्रैक्य (or श्रेंट्य) स्प्रिंत्र्र्में। f. a. p.

HORTATIVE MOOD.

Present: I ought to go; I must go.

प्रग्रिश f. a. p.

Or :--

दम् इम्बिश गुँ भेर्। and so on.

Or :--

प्रों द्रों श केंद्र | f. a. p.

Or vulgarly :-

द्रमें द्रमें पे भेर | and so on.

Or :---

पर्ने इने भेटा f. a. p.

Or:— २वाँ दर्गो मा Wal and so on. Past: I ought to have gone.

दर्ने दर्ने श्रास (or vulgarly द्रों न') भेद्र | and so on.

বৃশু-বৃশ্বার্দ্রা f. a. p. But see note re বুদ, p. 354.

PURPOSIVE MOOD.

Present: In order that, or so that, I may go.

वर्गे निते देवाया f. a. p.

Past: In order that, or so that, I might go.

रीक्सदे (or श्रॅट्सदे) देवाया f. a. p.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

지도 (축비) | Go. 합니 (축비) | Go. 합니 (축비) | Buch (축비) | Buch (축비) | Do not go.

PRECATIVE MOOD.

दर्गो पढ्ना (डेम)।

Let me, etc. go.

PERMISSIVE MOOD.

Present: I am allowed to go: I may go.

द्रमा है. a. p.

Or :--

वर्में केंग मी भेर। and so on.

 $(N.B. ext{—Other Tenses may be formed by conjugating } \widetilde{\mathfrak{SI}}$ regularly.)

OPTATIVE MOOD.

Present: Oh that, or would that, I were going.

२ में बर्केनायाल। ०० :--

f. a. p.

Past: Oh that, or would that, I had gone.

द्वेद (or श्रद्भ) द केंग्यायाखा

बुब-तर. (or श्रूट-वर.) र्जुना।

f. a. p.

(N.B.—The expressions in \overline{A} are not much used in Colloquial, being rather Literary.)

PARTICIPLES.

Present: द्रमान।

Going.

बुवया Perfect:

शंद्य।

Gone.

श्रद्धारा।

बुब-य-ध्येब-य।

Com. Perfect: য়ৄঢ়য়ড়ৢয়ৢয়

Having gone.

श्रिम्यायाधिवया।

Future:

त्में कु र्भवया

About to go.

ACTIVE, PERIPHRASTIC, OR SUBSTANTIVE.

त्रें स्थायन्।

वर्गे यदी

He who or that which goes; The goer.

द्वेव. (or श्रूट.) श्राप्तव।

येवयर।

红口了

त्मुं मुं अस्ति। পশ্ৰীকুৰী।

He who, or that which went.

He who or that which will go, or is to go.

OTHER PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

As in Colloquial Verb নার্থীন To see, No. IX, ব্রাণ্ডি taking খ্রাণ্ডি, and খ্রীন taking গ্রিণ taking গ্রেণ taking গ্রিণ taking গ্রণ taking গ্রিণ taking গ্রিণ taking গ্রিণ taking গ্রিণ taking গ্রণ taking গ্রেণ taking গ্রাণ taking গ্রাণ taking গ্রাণ taking গ্রণ taking গ্রাণ taking গ্রাণ taking গ্রাণ taking গ্রাণ taking গ্রণ taking গ্রাণ taking গ্রাণ taking গ্রাণ taking গ্রাণ taking গ্রণ taking গ্রাণ taking গ্রাণ taking গ্রাণ taking গ্রাণ taking গ্রণ taking গ্রাণ taking গ্রাণ taking গ্রাণ taking গ্রাণ taking গ্রণ taking গ্রাণ taking গ্রাণ taking গ্রাণ taking গ্রাণ taking গ্রণ taking গ্রাণ taking গ্রাণ taking গ্রাণ taking গ্রাণ taking গ্রণ taking গ্রাণ taking গ্রাণ taking গ্রাণ taking in taking taking

SUPINES.

VERBAL NOUNS OR ADJECTIVES.

지 (국) |
$$\bigcap_{\substack{\Lambda \in \mathcal{N} \\ \Lambda \in \mathcal{N}}} (\widehat{\zeta}) |$$
 $\bigcap_{\substack{\Lambda \in \mathcal{N} \\ \Lambda \in \mathcal{N}}} (\widehat{\zeta}) |$ $\bigcap_{\substack{\Lambda \in \mathcal{N} \\ \Lambda \in \mathcal{N}}} (\widehat{\zeta}) |$ $\bigcap_{\substack{\Lambda \in \mathcal{N} \\ \Lambda \in \mathcal{N}}} (\widehat{\zeta}) |$ The being about to go.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Future: २भूमिन्भिर्य।

To be about to go.

XIV.—Active 2-Rooted LITERARY Verb 즉키기 To go.

ROOTS.

Same as in Colloquial Verb, No. XIII, omitting 577

N.B.—The construction throughout is in the Nominative case.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present: I go.

द्रमाद्रा f. a. p.

Periphrastic: I am going.

द्रमानी भेर दे।

वर्गेनि स्रिन्द्र or वन्नामा।

वर्ते में स्पेर हैं or वर्ग में or स्र सरे रहें।

दर्ने न पेर् रें। and so on.

Past: I went.

शिंदि or युवर्ते। f. a. p.

धुक्राट्टा f. a. p.

Or :--

र्रोट प धीव दें।

श्रेट्यत्र्वामा or occ., chiefly interr. धेव वे। श्रेंदायां भेव वे ।

युक्य प्रेक्ट्रें। and so on.

Imperfect: I was going.

Same as Periphrastic Present, context showing Tense.

Or :---

बॅटिन (or धुक्य) ध्येक्ने । and so on.

Or :---

बिंद (or धुन्बिंद) व्यद्भन्ने and so on.

Perfect: I have gone.

Same as Past.

Pluperfect: I had gone.

Same as Past.

Or, seldom used save at end of sentence:-

शेंद (or धुन) न्सः भेंदि and so on.

Or : -

सिंद (or दीन) पेंदिन्। f. a. p.

Future: I shall go.

द्रों नर द्रमुर रें। f. a. p.

Or :—

तर्में पर नुत्। f. a. p.

Or :-

द्रमु अंदर्दा f. a. p.

SUBJUNCTIVE AND CONDITIONAL MOODS.

Present: If ... I shall go.

(Present Root) তেওঁ (any simple Future).

Past: If ... I would go.

(Perfect Root) ত্র স্টের (or খ্রুর্র) ঐবর্ and so on. Or, same as Present.

Perfect: If ... I would have gone.

(Perfect Root) ত্রামান (or খ্রীর্মা) অনুন্ত্রী and so on.

POTENTIAL MOOD.

Same as Potential Mood in Literary স্ট্রেন্ To send, No. VII, using Root বৃদ্যা throughout.

PROBABILITY.

Present: Perhaps I shall go; I may go.

মুন্ধ। ... (simple Future).

Or :-

ዓ፞፞፞፟፲፟፟፟፟፟፟፟፟፟፟፟፟ ዓ. ል. p.

Or :--

दर्गेश्चित्री f. a. p.

Past: Perhaps I would go; I might go.

वर्गे श्रेन्य भेन ने। and so on.

Perfect: Perhaps I would have gone; I might have gone.

वर्गेश्चिर्यं प्राचित्री and so on.

HORTATIVE MOOD.

Similar to Literary 775.7 | To send, No. VII.

PURPOSIVE MOOD.

PRECATIVE MOOD.

아:-아 대주다 | Let me, etc., go.
아 대주다 | 다 대주다

PERMISSIVE AND OPTATIVE MOOD.

As in Literary 75 7 7 To send, No. VII, keeping the construction in the Nominative case and using the appropriate roots.

ম'ব্লু।

Or :--

दम्रीं नर के दम्बा

Or :-

दम्यार समुर विमा

दर्गी पर से नुदे।

Do not go.

PARTICIPLES.

. Present:

दर्गेग्रा

Going.

श्राह्म or द्वेदाय।

Perfect:

श्रद. (or द्वेब.) ष्ट्र-ध।

श्राद. (or द्वीब.) जुब.दा।

श्रदःयः (or द्वेब्दा) श्रवःय।

Com. Perfect:

श्रीट. (or द्वेब.) क्र्य.य.लुब.च ।

श्र्ट. (or द्वेथ.) चुबेरा.लुबेरा।

दर्गे. तर दर्गीर व।

Future:

८र्गे. वर मुना

८मू.व।

<u> २ में ज़ु।</u>

About to go.

Having gone.

Gone.

ACTIVE OR PERIPHRASTIC OR SUBSTANTIVE.

Same as in Colloquial No. XIII, save for the following:-

वर्गे वरवगुरवरी

<u>५म्</u>गॅ.वर:ग्रु:वरी

वर्गे मुःश्वायाते।

न्म<u>ें भिन्ना</u>

त्में सम्ब।

He who or that which will go, or is to go.

PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

Same as in Colloquial No. XIII.

VERBAL NOUNS.

| वर्गेन (दे)। | Going; a or the going. |
|-------------------------------------|------------------------|
| शॅट्य (वे)। | 777 |
| विषय (वै)। | The having gone. |
| वर्ने वर वर्गे रामः (व)। | |
| वित्रायर मुखः (वि)। | The being about to go. |
| त्र् <u>म</u> ें कुं प्येव या (वे)। | |

SUPINES.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

| Present: | २ र्गेप। | To go. |
|-----------|--------------------------------|---------------|
| | श्राम or द्वेत्य। |) |
| Perfect : | र्शेट (or धुेव) क्ष्या | |
| | श्र्ट (or द्वेष) त्रेष्प। | To have gone. |
| | श्रदःयः (or द्वेषःयः) ध्येषःय। | |

८म्ॅानर.८चीर.घ।

वर्गे वर मुन।

Future:

दर्गे. पर माइशाया

दर्ने कुष्पेदय। दर्ने या To be about to go.

XV.—Two-rooted LITERARY Verb AJATI To become, To be changed, To be turned, To grow, etc.

N.B.—This verb is often used as an Auxiliary verb, and the way in, and extent to which, it is so employed, is best seen in the other Literary Conjugations. It is purely classical.

The construction here is in the NOMINATIVE case.

Roots.

Present: ব্ৰুম্ | Perfect: লুম্ | Future: ব্ৰুম্|

Imperative: गुरं | but sometimes ज्ना

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present: I become.

प्रमुद**ें**। f. a. p.

Periphrastic: I am becoming.

প্রয়ুক শূরিক শেক দি

वसुर गुने भेर दें or वर्गामा।

नुन् गुन् भेर दें or तुनामां or सेर्यारेन्द्र।

Past: I became.

मुर or मुर्दे f. a. p.

Or:

मुर्याधिव वे।

मुँरदाद्रुम्में or occ. chiefly interr. धेद्रेद्री

मुर्यायेव व

Imperfect: I was becoming.

Same as Periphrastic Present, context showing Tense.

Or :--

गुरपायेन ने and so on.

Or :--

मुर विष्येर याधेव वे। and so on.

Perfect: I have become.

Same as Past.

Pluperfect: I had become.

Same as Past.

Or, though seldom used :-

मुरवशर्थेर् रें। f. a. p.

Or :--

गुरु: थेंर् र्रें। f. a. p.

Future: I shall become.

त्र्युर:पर:प्रग्नुर:र्हे। f. a. p.

Or:-

त्युर:वर:युद्रे। f. a. p

SUBJUNCTIVE AND CONDITIONAL MOODS.

Present: If... I shall become.

(Present Root) (simple Future).

Past: If ... I would become.

(Perfect Root) عَلَيْ الْجَارِيَةِ الْجَارِةِ الْجَاءِ الْجَارِةِ الْجَارِةِ الْجَارِةِ الْجَارِةِ الْجَارِةِ الْجَاءِ الْجَارِةِ الْجَائِيلِيَّةِ الْجَارِةِ الْجَائِقِ الْحَالِقِ الْجَائِقِ الْجَائِقِ الْجَائِقِ الْجَائِقِ الْجَائِقِ الْحَالِقِيلِيَّةِ الْجَائِقِ الْجَائِقِ الْجَائِقِ الْجَائِقِ الْجَائِقِ الْجَائِقِ الْجَائِي

Or :-

(Perfect Root) ত্রুম্মের্র্ and so on.

Perfect: If ... I would have become.

(Perfect Root) "न् मुर्यंभ्रें र्रे। and so on.

POTENTIAL MOOD, PROBABILITY, HORTATIVE MOOD.

(As in Literary Verb 57377 | To be glad. No. XI.)

PURPOSIVE MOOD.

Present: So that I may become.

Past: So that I might become.
ন্ত্ৰুম্মেন্ট্ৰিন্ট্ৰ' or খ্ৰীমানু | f. a. p.

PRECATIVE MOOD.

PERMISSIVE AND OPTATIVE MOODS.

As in Literary 75.71 To send, No. VII, keeping the construction in the Nominative Case, and using the appropriate Roots.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

PARTICIPLES.

| Present: | ८मुर.म। | Becoming. |
|----------|-----------------|-----------|
| | ฮูรจเ | |
| Perfect: | লুন:র্ক্র:ব। | Become. |
| | ड मार'बेक्स। | |

नुर-य-प्येद्य।

Com. Perfect : नुर-ऊर-य-प्येद्य।

नुर-चेद-य-प्येद-य।

द्युर-य-प्येद-य।

द्युर-य-प्येद-य।

द्युर-य-प्येद-य।

About to become.

द्युर-कु-प्येद-य।

द्युर-कु-प्येद-य।

PERIPHRASTIC EXPRESSIONS.

 त्रमुर्च (र्रे or क्रे।
 (र्रे or क्रे)।

 त्रमुर्मा (र्रे or क्रे)।
 (र्रे or क्रे)।

 सुरमा (र्रे or क्रे)।
 (र्रे or क्रे)।

 त्रमुरमा (र्रे or क्रे)।
 <

OTHER PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

Same as in राष्ट्राय To see, No. XI, using the appropriate Roots.

Both विभूत and भूत take 5 and भूता

SUPINES.

दगुर:यर। दगुर:५।

To become.

VERBAL NOUNS.

त्रमुद्रःयः (कै)। प्रमुद्रःयः (के)। प्रमुद्रःयः प्रमुद्रःयः (के)। प्रमुद्रःयः (के)।

Becoming. A or the becoming.

The having become.

The being about to become.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Present : द्युर्प

To become.

गुर'य।

Perfect : गुर.कॅर.य|

गुर:बेक्स। उ

गुरमधेनय।

वर्गेर.घर.वर्गेर.घ।

Future: AJT-AT-J-A|

प्रमीट.घर.घोचश्रारा।

त्रगुरःकुं प्येषःय।

To have become.

To be about to become.

XVI.—Active, 4-Rooted Colloquial Verb 3577 To do, To make, etc.

N.B.—The construction is in the AGENTIVE case, save where otherwise indicated.

Roots.

The construction is throughout similar to that of Colloquial Tipe To send, No. VI, up to and including the Optative Mood, save for the following:—

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

| | EILOOD. | |
|----------------|----------|-----|
| र्वेद्रा-विमा |] | |
| ট্রীশ্ব-প্রিम। | | |
| নীশ্ব-পুনা। | Do | |
| नुन-हेमा | • | |
| ਕਾਉਂਹ। | Do not a | lo. |

N.B.—The form 35 Do is probably really 551

PARTICIPLES.

As in Colloquial AST To send, No. VI.

ACTIVE OR PERIPHRASTIC EXPRESSIONS.

As in Colloquial 7557 To send, No. VI.

OTHER PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

Present.

And so on, as in Colloquial 757 To send, No. VI.

Past.

5작기 Having done.

5작기지 |
Because, since, when ..did, or was done, or had done.

And so on, as in Colloquial AFT To send, No. VI.